Research on the Biblical Approach and the Method of Exegesis Appearing in the Greek Homiletic Texts of the Late Fourth Centuries, Emphasizing the Incarnation Especially the Nativity and Mary's Place Within It

Bertrand Buby

Follow this and additional works at: http://ecommons.udayton.edu/ml_studies

Part of the Religion Commons

Recommended Citation
Available at: http://ecommons.udayton.edu/ml_studies/vol13/iss1/5

This Article is brought to you for free and open access by the Marian Library Publications at eCommons. It has been accepted for inclusion in Marian Library Studies by an authorized administrator of eCommons. For more information, please contact frice1@udayton.edu.
BERTRAND BUBY, S.M.


Part of the Doctoral Dissertation in Sacred Theology with Specialization in Marian Studies

UNIVERSITY OF DAYTON
DAYTON OHIO
1981-82
Vidimus et approbamus.

Dayton (Ohio), ex aedibus Instituti
« International Marian Research Institute, »
et Romae, ex aedibus Pontificiae
Facultatis Theologicae Marianum.

Nomina Revisorum

March 1, 1986 Théodore A. Koehler, S.M.
March 8, 1986 Giorgio M. Francini, O.S.M.

MARIAN LIBRARY STUDIES Volume 13-14 December 1981-82

CONTENTS:

L’ omelia sulla generazione di Cristo di Basilio di Cesarea. Il posto della Vergine Maria
Luigi Gambero, S.M. 1

Research on the Biblical Approach and the Method of Exegesis Appearing in the Greek Homiletic Texts of the Late Fourth and Early Fifth Centuries, Emphasizing the Incarnation Especially the Nativity and Mary’s Place within It (Excerpts)
Bertrand Buby, S.M. 223

La dévotion mariale au XVIe siècle à la lumière des Manuels de Catéchêse en usage en Amérique Latine, en France, en Espagne et en Italie
Jean-Marie Salgado, O.M.I. 397

Exégèse, tradition, catéchêse
Conclusions (in English)
Théodore Koehler, S.M. 633
TABLE OF CONTENTS

* In preparing this dissertation for publication, it was decided to omit Chapters I and II and parts of the introductory materials. The original complete Table of Contents is, however, presented here.

SITUATING THE RESEARCH: STATUS QUAESTITONIS

INTRODUCTION

CHAPTER I: THE BEGINNING AND DEVELOPMENT OF EXEGESIS INTO THE LATE FOURTH CENTURY

Section I: Jewish Exegesis, Midrash
Section II: The Septuagint
Section III: Philo
Section IV: The Epistle of Barnabas—An Early Christian Apologetic
Section V: Clement of Alexandria
Section VI: Origen
Section VII: Ignatius of Antioch: Eastern Beginnings
Section VIII: Polycarp: Beginnings of Antiochene Exegesis
Section IX: Clement of Rome
Section X: Justin
Section XI: Irenaeus of Lyon
Section XII: Summary and Conclusion

CHAPTER II: A STUDY OF THE BIBLICAL PRINCIPLES AND METHODS IN TEXTS RELATING TO THE INCARNATION AND MARY'S ROLE WITHIN THE MYSTERY OF CHRIST'S BIRTH FROM 350 A.D. TO 430 A.D.

The Cappadocians' Method of Scriptural Exegesis in Their Incarnational Homilies
The Biblical Principles and Methods of John Chrysostom
Theodore of Mopsuestia: His Principles of Exegesis
The Jerusalemites: Cyril of Jerusalem and Hesychius

Chapter III: Orchestration of Biblical Texts Used by the Fathers in Their Nativity Homilies: The Role of Mary within the Texts

Part I: 1. Amphilochius
2. Basil the Great
3. Gregory of Nyssa
4. Gregory of Nazianzen
5. John Chrysostom
6. Cyril of Jerusalem
7. Hesychius of Jerusalem

Part II: Hesychius: Study of Texts within Hypapante II

Part III: Origen and Basil: A Comparative/Contrast Study of Scriptural Texts

Part IV: Amphilochius and Hesychius: Commentary on Ezekiel 44:2

Part V: Amphilochius, Gregory of Nyssa and Hesychius: Commentary on Exodus 3:2: The Burning Bush

Part VI: Excursus on Liturgical Setting of the Homilies

Chapter IV: The Use of the Scriptures and Marian Implications in the Homilies and Writings of the Fathers

Part I: On the Virginity of Mary
The Cappadocians
The Antiochenes
The Jerusalemites

Part II: Mary's Role in the Soteriological Purpose of the Incarnation
The Cappadocians
The Antiochenes
The Jerusalemites
Part III: Typology: Parallelism of: Adam/Christ — Eve/Mary
The Cappadocians
The Antiochenes
The Jerusalemites

CONCLUSIONS

BIBLIOGRAPHY

** A Table of Contents for the thesis material actually published here is provided at the end of this section, along with the pertinent Indices.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Title</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>AnalBoll</td>
<td><em>Analecta Bollandiana</em> (Brussels, 1882-).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BAC</td>
<td>Biblioteca de autores cristianos (Madrid, 1945- ).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BARDENHEWER</td>
<td>O. BARDENHEWER, <em>Geschichte der altkirchlichen Literatur</em>, 5 v. (Freiburg, 1913-32).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BiblPatr</td>
<td><em>Biblia Patristica</em>, ed. by J. ALLENBACH, A. BENOTT, D. A. BERTRAND, A. HAUURIOT-COUSTET, P. MARAVOL, A. PAULTER, P. PRIGENT. V. 1, Des</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Abbreviations

Abbreviations


BKV Bibliothek der Kirchenväter (Kempten, 1911-).

CCG Corpus Christianorum. Series graeca (Brepols-Turnhout, Belgium, 1978-).

ChrCent1 J. Daniélou and H. I. Marrou, The First Six Hundred Years, tr. by V. Cronin, v. 1 of The Christian Centuries (New York, 1964).

CMP Corpus Marianum Patristicum, ed. by S. Alvarez Campos, v. 1- (Burgos, 1970-).


CSCO Corpus scriptorum Christianorum orientalium (Paris-Louvain, 1903-).

CSEL Corpus scriptorum ecclesiasticorum latinorum (Vienna, 1866-).


DBSuppl Dictionnaire de la Bible, suppl., ed. by L. Pirot et al. (Paris, 1928-).


DHGE Dictionnaire d’histoire et de géographie ecclésiastiques, ed. by A. Baudrillart et al. (Paris, 1912-).

DSp Dictionnaire de spiritualité ascétique et mystique. Doctrine et histoire, ed. by M. Viller et al. (Paris, 1932-).


EnchMar | D. Casagrande, Enchiridion Marianum Biblicum Patristicum (Rome, 1974).


EphM | Ephemerides Mariologicae (Madrid, 1951-).

EThL | Ephemerides theologicae Lovanienses (Bruges, 1924-).

FathCh | The Fathers of the Church: A New Translation, ed. by R. J. Deferrari et al. (New York, 1947-60; Washington, 1961-).

GCS | Die griechischen christlichen Schriftsteller der ersten drei Jahrhunderte (Berlin, 1897-).


ITQ | The Irish Theological Quarterly (Dublin, 1906-22, 1951-).


Abbreviations


MéliSR | Mélanges de Science Religieuse (Lille, 1944-).

MLS | Marian Library Studies (Marian Library, University of Dayton, Dayton, Ohio; New Series: 1969-).


OChP | Orientalia Christiana Periodica (Rome, 1935-).


<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PO</td>
<td><em>Patrologia Orientalis</em>, ed. by R. Graffin and F. Nau (Paris, 1903-).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RB</td>
<td><em>Revue biblique</em> (Paris, 1892-).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RBén</td>
<td><em>Revue Bénédictine</em> (Maredsous, 1884-).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RechScRel</td>
<td><em>Recherches de science religieuse</em> (Paris, 1910-).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RHE</td>
<td><em>Revue d'histoire ecclésiastique</em> (Louvain, 1900-).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RSPT</td>
<td><em>Revue des sciences philosophiques et théologiques</em> (Paris, 1907-).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RThAM</td>
<td><em>Recherches de théologie ancienne et médiévale</em> (Louvain, 1929-).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SC</td>
<td><em>Sources chrétiennes</em>, ed. by H. De Lubac and J. Daniélou (Paris, 1942-).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TU</td>
<td><em>Texte und Untersuchungen zur Geschichte der altchristlichen Literatur</em> (Berlin, 1882-).</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
BIBLIOGRAPHY


ALDAMA, J. A. DE. Maria en la patristica de los siglos I y II. BAC, 1970.
— "La tragedia Christus patiens y la doctrina Mariana en la Capadocia del siglo IV." Epéktasis, pp. 417-423.


— "Une homélie grecque inédite antinestorienne du Ve siècle sur l'Incarnation du Seigneur." RBén 58 (1948) 223-263.


AMPHILOCHIU. Amphilochii Iconiensis Opera. Edited by C. Datema. CCG 3 (1978).


BARDENHEWER, O. *Geschichte der Altkirchlichen Literatur.* Vol. 2. 2nd ed. Freiburg im Breisgau, 1913.

— “Le Concile d’Antioche (379).” *RBen* 45 (1933) 196-213.


— *Opera Omnia.* PG 29. 30, 31, 32.


Bibliography

BECKMANN, J. H. “Status doctrinae mariologicae ante Ephesinum conciliique influxus in pietatem marianam subsequentem.” *De primordiis II*: 281-292
BOULARAND, E. *La nécessité de la grâce pour arriver à la foi d’après saint Jean Chrysostome*. Analecta Gregoriana, 18. 1939.


— Opera Omnia. PG 47-64, in 13 volumes (1858-62).


— Chrysostom. SelectLibNicPNic (Series 1), vols. IX-XIV.

Bibliography


Greek Patristic Exegesis (4th C.)

- De Ambrogi, D. P. "I sensi Biblici, Direttive e studi recenti." La Scuola Cattolica 78 (1950) 444-456.
- "Il senso letterale pieno nelle Divine Scritture." La Scuola Cattolica 60 (1932) 296-312.
- Diekamp, F. Doctrina Patrum de Verbi Incarnatione. Munster, 1907.
- "Maternità e virtù di Maria in San Giovanni Crisostomo." Marianum 25 (1963) 405-446.
Bibliography


Eusebius Pamphili of Caesarea. The Ecclesiastical History. PG 20: 45-906;
GCS 9: 1-3 (E. Schwartz); SC 31: 41, 55 (G. Bardy). English translation
— The Ecclesiastical History and the Martyrs of Palestine. Translated by
28.
— The History of the Church from Christ to Constantine. Translated by G. A.

— “La spiritualité Mariale chez les Pères de l’Église.” In “Marie (Vierge),”

Festugière, A. J. Antioche païenne et Chrétienne. Libanius, Chrysostome et

Finn, Th. M. “Baptismal Death and Resurrection: A Study in Fourth-Century
— The Liturgy of Baptism in the Baptismal Instructions of St. John Chry-

Fittkan, G. Der Begriff des Mysteriums bei Johannes Chrysostomus. Bonn,
1953.

Fitzmeyer, J. The Historical Truth of the Gospels (the 1964 Instruction of the

Flanagan, M. H. Chrysostom in the Condescension and Accuracy of the Scrip-

Fleury, E. Hellenisme et christianisme: Saint Grégoire de Nazianze et son


Fritz, G. “Pierre d’Alexandrie.” DTC XII: 1802-1804 (1935); DTC Tables


Gallus, T. “De sensu verborum Lc. 2: 35 eorumque momento mariologicum,”
Biblica 29 (1948) 220-239.

Galtier, P. “Théodore de Mopsueste: Sa vraie pensée sur l’Incarnation.”

Gambero, L. “La Madonna negli scritti di San Basilio.” Mater Ecclesiae XV
(Gennaio-Aprile, 1979) 37-45.
— L’Omelia sulla generazione di Cristo di Basilio di Cesarea. Il posto della

Harvard Theological Review 24 (1931) 121-142.

— The Poor of Yahweh. Translated by Mother Kathryn Sullivan. College-


GROOT, A. DE. Die Schmerzhafte Mutter und Gefährtin des göttlichen Erlösers in der Weissagung Simeons (Lk. 2: 35). Kaldenkirchen: Steyler, 1956


HAIDACKER, J. Die Lehre des heiligen Johannes Chrysostomus über die Schriftinspiration. Salzburg, 1897.
Bibliography


HARVANEK, R. F. "Gregory of Nyssa, St." NCEnc 6: 794-796 (1967).


HERGENROTHER, J. Die Antiochenische Schule und ihre Bedeutung auf exege­tischem Gebiete. Würzburg, 1866.


JOURJON, M. "Aux origines de la prière d’intercession de Marie. (Le témoignage des Pères des cinq premiers siècles)." BEM, 23 (1966) 37-49.
JUGIE, M. "La première fête mariale en Orient et en Occident." *Echos d’Orient* 22 (1923) 129-152.


— "Die Lehre des heiligen Johannes Chrysostomus über den Heiligen Geist." *Der Katholik* 93, 1 (1913) 304-320.


KÜHN, H. *Die ältesten Christlichen Schulen überhaupt und die Schulen zu Antioch, Edessa und Nisibis insbesondere.* 1st part. Weissenburg, 1865.

KLEIST, J. A. *The Epistle of Barnabas.* AncChrWr 6 (1948).


LATKO, E. F. *Origen's Concept of Penance.* Laval: Québec University, 1949.

LAURENTIN, R. *Court Traité de Théologie Marielle.* Paris, 1954. Table rectificative des pièces mariales inauthentiques ou discutées contenues dans les deux patrologies de Migne (pp. 119-173).
MORIN, G. “Quelques aperçus nouveaux sur l’Opus imperfectum in Matthaeum.” RBën 17 (1925) 239-262.


— *Contra Celsum.* Edited by P. KOETSCHAU. GCS 2-3 (1899).


Ortiz de Urbina, I. “Lo sviluppo della Mariologia nella Patrologia Orientale.” OChP 6 (1940) 40-82.


— “Primi sermones panegyrici in honorem Mariae a medio saeculo IV ad medium saeculum V.” *De primordiis* 3: 119-133.


Parker, H. J. *A Catalogue of Editions of the Fathers of the Church and Ecclesiastical Writers of the First Thirteen Centuries and Collections of Their Fragments, Chronologically Arranged. To Which is Added, a List of Books Recommended to Students in Divinity*. Oxford, 1844.


— *St. Basil the Great and Apollinaris of Laodicea.* Edited by H. Chadwick.


Rado, P. “Die Pseudo-Chrysostomische Homilie: εἰς τὴν Χριστοῦ Γέννησιν.”
   *Zeitschrift für katholische Theologie* 61 (1932) 82-83.


Rathai, O. “Johannes Chrysostomus als Exeget.” *Pastor bonus* 30 (1918) 342-351.

Reine, F. J. *The Eucharistic Doctrine and Liturgy of the Mystagogical catechesis of Theodore of Mopsuestia.*

   PO 36: 139-388 (1971).
   — “L’Épiphanie à Jérusalem au iv° et au v° siècle d’apres le Lectionnaire arménien de Jérusalem.”


Riddle, M. B. “Homilies on the Gospel of Matthew (St. John Chrysostom as Exegete).” *SelectLibNicPNic X* (Series I, 1894).


Rolandus, J. *Le Christ et l’homme dans la théologie d’Athanase d’Alexandrie.*
   Étude de la conjonction de sa conception de l’homme avec sa Christologie.

Roover, E. R. de. *L’exégèse patristique de Luc. 1: 35 des origines à Augustin ...*


SCHMITZ, P. “Lettres de Dom Claude Martin relatives à l’édition de St. Athanase et de St. Jean Chrysostome.” *RBén* 41 (1929) passim.


SHAW, P. E. *The Early Tractarians and the Eastern Church.* Milwaukee, 1930.


SPICQ, C. “L’avènement de la théologie biblique.” *RSPT* 35 (1951) 561-574.  

Bibliography


Tarchnischvili, M. *Le grand lectionnaire de l'Église de Jerusalem (V-VIII siècles).* CSCO 188, 189, 204, 205. Louvain, 1959, 1960. *(Scriptores Iberici 9-10, 13-14)*


249
— Theodori Mopsuesteni, Commentarius in Evangelium Johannis Apostoli. Edited by J. Vosté. CSCO (Series Syr.) 115. Louvain, 1940.


Usener, H. Das Weihnachtsenfest. 2nd ed. Bonn, 1911.


— “Inedita aus den Homilien des hl. Chr. über die Paulusbriefe nach der Handschrift No. 48 von Angora.” Handes Amsorya 27 (1913) 222-227.


Bibliography

VosTÉ, J. "La chronologie de l'activité de Théodore de Mopsueste." RB 34 (1925) 54-81.


— "Jean Chrysostome (saint)." DSp 8: 331-335 (1972).


WOOLLCOMBE, K. J. "Le sens de ‘type’ chez les Pères." Supplément de la Vie Spirituelle IV, 16 (février 1951) 84-100.


INTRODUCTION

How did the Greek Fathers of the Church in the golden age of Patristic thought use the Bible for their preaching and explaining the mystery of the Incarnation? Were they exclusively interested in the New Testament? Which texts were important for them in their reflections on the Incarnation? What image did Mary of Nazareth have in their sermons, commentaries and panegyrics on the Incarnation or on the feasts celebrated in the liturgy of their churches? Is there a noticeable difference of approach in the different centers of culture where these Church Fathers and Bishops resided? that is, can we see a different school of interpretation in Cappadocia, Antioch, Jerusalem? These are the questions initially posed in researching the homilies and commentaries of these leaders of Church thought. These are also the points of emphasis in this research concerned with discovering the interpretation of texts used, the methods of approach, the principles of exegesis and the structure of their presentation.

Only a thorough study of the entire opera of these Fathers would conclusively satisfy such questions and points of emphasis. This work is meant as a beginning, a point of departure for further development and further research. Material from a limited genre, normally the homily or a commentary on specific Scriptural texts, has been chosen to illustrate their method of approaching the Sacred Scriptures in the mystery of the Incarnation.

The selections chosen for this study have been used for research many times by scholars. It is specifically the biblical approach of these preaching writers which is the concern of this limited study. While reading, it was also apparent that each homily or work had to be seen as a precious gem in itself, with the analysis, observation, and inspiration flashing from the various facets of beauty and brilliance found within the isolated priceless jewel.

One very recent study which helped support this method of approach was done by an American scholar who has developed the redaction criticism method. Especially rewarding were the following thoughts:

The interpretation of biblical texts is not governed by theoretical principles different from those applying to any other literature. We can
Introduction

make the claim in reverse: hermeneutical principles arrived at by a consideration of biblical texts will be applicable also to non-biblical texts, and in particular to the use of the biblical symbol... It is mutatis mutandis applicable to any text.¹

The present study was undertaken with such an approach, namely, the principles of New Testament exegesis were the presuppositions and the angle of approach used in studying these Patristic texts. Textual criticism, historical criticism and literary criticism are part and parcel of the process of analysis, interpretation, and comparison of these texts. That is, this study attempts to reach an understanding of written Patristic texts which are considered meaningful by the Church.

The final step in this process of interpretation is the act of interpretation itself.

But if texts are to be so understood, then they can be questioned with regard to the understanding of human life which they express; they can be interrogated by the interpreter with regard to their understanding of the nature of human existence in the world. This is the "pre-understanding" (Vorverstándnis) with which an interpreter approaches a text; it is the "direction of enquiry" (das Woraufhin) which determines the questions to be asked of the text.²

Finally, the same faith that imbued the writers of the texts is a basic ingredient to be found in an act of interpretation which concerns itself with the MYSTERIUM CHRISTI.

This study of homiletic Patristic Greek texts commences with the works circa 350 A.D. (terminus a quo) and extends to the year 430 A.D. (terminus ad quem), just prior to the Council of Ephesus. It is the intention of the writer to present the exegetical approach of these Fathers of the Church in their sermons or homilies which touch upon the birth of Jesus Christ. Primarily, the study is meant to complement research done on the mystery of the Incarnation. It is not a theological treatise on this event of salvation; rather it is an attempt to present the biblical point of departure for these ecclesiastical pastors. Their method, their favorite texts, and their biblical principles are sorted out, compared, analyzed, presented.

² Ibid., p. 10
The purpose of this research is to demonstrate how these approaches and methods within a living biblical tradition are a part of the broad development of the history of biblical interpretation. The exegetes of this living tradition are humbly aware as they interpret the Bible that their exegesis rests on the shoulders of the giants of their past. In turn, they are seen as part of today's living tradition of biblical interpretation.

The Greek Fathers of the late fourth and early fifth centuries are chosen because they represent several geographical areas of importance in the Church: Alexandria, Antioch, Cappadocia, and Jerusalem. They also contribute to historical enrichment of previously developed biblical exegesis.

Chapter Summaries

CHAPTER ONE

THE BEGINNING AND DEVELOPMENT OF EXEGESIS INTO THE LATE FOURTH CENTURY

The background, in general, for the exegetical approach of the earlier Church Fathers is embedded in a long living tradition within the Christian Church. Before the late fourth century, there already existed a mature approach to biblical interpretation of the Word of God. Moreover, Christian interpretation itself began within the New Testament which also was dependent on the biblical tradition of Judaism. Thus the pre-Christian approach of the Jews—in oral tradition, in the translating of their Bible into the Septuagint, and then the cultural ramifications of a Philo of Alexandria on that same translated text—becomes important in the development of interpretation. Through Philo, the Christian leaders of Alexandria are given a definite approach to the Bible. Clement of Alexandria and Origen move on from that point and begin to fashion a more precise Christian approach to interpreting the Word of God in the living tradition of the Church.

Not only in Alexandria, but elsewhere, additional approaches to the interpretation of the revealed Word of God occurred. Even the Apostolic and Apologetic Fathers of both East and West followed a traditional pattern for their exegesis. This can be traced in the West through Clement of Rome, Justin, and Irenaeus; in the East through Ignatius and Polycarp.
CHAPTER TWO

A Study of the Biblical Principles and Methods in Texts Relating to the Incarnation and Mary's Role within the Mystery of Christ's Birth from 350 A.D. to 430 A.D.

Building on the biblical approach and outline presented in chapter one, the setting of the late fourth and early fifth centuries is seen as important in the development of exegesis on texts about Christ and, in a subordinate and secondary way, on those which mention Mary insofar as the later Conciliar notion of Theotokos is taking form.

The Fathers chosen are from the areas of Antioch, Cappadocia, and Jerusalem. Alexandria as a school of exegesis was already sketched in chapter one; it now serves as a point for comparison and contrast in the exegesis of the above men who are representatives of key Christian centers.

John Chrysostom and Theodore of Mopsuestia represent the best of Antiochene exegesis; Gregory of Nazianzen, Basil the Great, Gregory of Nyssa, and Amphilochius of Iconium represent Cappadocian homiletic exegesis; Hesychius and Cyril, both of Jerusalem, represent that area. Some pseudonymous writers from the same period of time are also briefly studied through a few nativity homilies.

The texts chosen have been limited both to the mystery of the Nativity and to the fact that some of them mention the Mother of Jesus, Mary. Above all, these texts have been chosen to illustrate that the development of biblical exegesis can be traced through limited genres and perceived as the ongoing presence of the Holy Spirit in the living tradition of revelation.

CHAPTER THREE

Orchestration of Biblical Texts Used by the Fathers in Their Nativity Homilies: The Role of Mary within the Texts

This chapter is a study of the principal scriptural texts used by the Fathers in the materials chosen from their homilies and discourses on the Incarnation. The role of Mary is presented through an analysis of these texts. An effort was made to study especially those texts which appeared in several of the Fathers. This is uniquely evident in the study of Luke 2:35, Simeon's prophecy of the sword which pierces the soul of Mary. Origen's commentary is presented and contrasted with Letter 260 of St. Basil.
The key texts of Isaiah 7:14 and Baruch 3:38 are presented in this section of the thesis. They summarize in themselves the content of the thesis, since they were seen by the Fathers as prophetic texts which were fulfilled in the Event of the Incarnation (Baruch 3:38) and the Birth of the Messiah from the Virgin (Isaiah 7:14).

The text of Ezekiel 44:1-2 is carefully analyzed; its importance for Hesychius of Jerusalem becomes evident in his relating it to the integral virginity of Mary. A short excursus on the “burning bush” (Exodus 3:2) is presented through Gregory of Nyssa, Amphilochius, and Hesychius of Jerusalem.

CHAPTER FOUR

THE USE OF THE SCRIPTURES AND MARIAN IMPLICATIONS IN THE HOMILIES AND WRITINGS OF THE FATHERS

The fourth chapter is more of a contextual study of the texts presented in chapter three. Several patterns of thought emerge through this fuller view of the material. Mary is presented as the Virgin from whom Christ is born (ek parthenou not dia parthenou). Her human flesh is the real medium or instrument for the humanity of Jesus Christ. The soteriological or salvific purpose of the Incarnation is central to the thought of the Fathers. Typology through tradition has a place in these homilies of the Fathers. Finally, the liturgical setting and the festive celebration for these homilies formed the atmosphere in which the biblical tradition of these times was enlivened and deepened. What had begun in the Synagogue with the Targums and the Septuagint was now proclaimed from the Christian pulpit.
CHAPTER III

ORCHESTRATION OF BIBLICAL TEXTS
USED BY THE FATHERS IN THEIR NATIVITY HOMILIES:
THE ROLE OF MARY WITHIN THE TEXTS

PART I. GENERAL STUDY

Introduction:

The texts chosen by the Fathers in Nativity homilies are not always from the same portions of the Scriptures. What is important is that each of the Fathers used texts either from the Infancy Narratives or from both the Hebrew Scriptures and the New Testament. A pattern of referring to the same texts appears in the writings of the Fathers, even though they are from diverse geographical areas and have different methods of interpretation. This choice of basic texts or sequence of the same texts is a type of "orchestration" which seems to trigger the memory of the preacher or writer to hearken again and again to these specific texts. Among the most frequently used texts are Baruch 3: 38, Isaiah 7: 14 and Isaiah 9: 5 from the Old Testament, while the Nativity texts and the Prologue of St. John are the ones chosen from the New Testament. A study of the homilies led to a discovery of such favorite texts or to what can be called an "orchestration of texts."

CAPPADOCIANS

1. Amphilochius († 394)

A. New Testament:

In the New Testament, the initial chapters of Luke (1 & 2) and Matthew are the principal sources for the Fathers in their homilies and commentaries on the Birth of Christ and the role of Mary in the salvific effects of the Incarnation. It is Amphilochius of Iconium († 394) to whom we first turn. He
centers on specific Lucan texts for *Oratio I, In Natalitia Domini*, and *Oratio II, In Occursum Domini*.1

1. Luke 1: 35 (*Oratio II: 2, ll. 64-65*): A holy spirit will come upon you and the power of the Most High will overshadow you; hence, the holy offspring to be born will be called Son of God.

This verse is within the context of fulfilling what was prescribed in the Old Testament concerning the first fruits which were to be presented to the Lord. The setting Amphilochius has chosen is taken from Luke himself who uses the text of Leviticus 12: 3, 6 and more explicitly that of Exodus 13: 2, 12, 15 to show the rite of purification Mary was performing in the Temple: “Every male opening the womb shall be declared holy to the Lord” (Luke 2: 23). Amphilochius sees this verified in the dialogue of the Angel Gabriel with Mary: “The holy [offspring] will be called Son of God” (ἀγιον κληθήσεται νιός θεοῦ [Luke 1: 35c]).

The text of Luke 2: 23 which has its source in Exodus 13: 2, 12, 15 is summarized by Luke in this fashion: “Every firstborn male opening the womb shall be called holy to the Lord” (Πᾶν ἄρσεν διανοίγων μήτραν ἄγιον τῷ νυμίῳ κληθήσεται). Amphilochius uses the text as a confirmation that what was written in the Law and confirmed in the Dispensation of grace was fulfilled in the Lord alone (*Oratio II: 2, ll. 36-37*). Amphilochius does not have the ἐξ σοῦ (“by thee”) in Luke 1: 35, a reading which was apparently a later addition, to continue the reading of the two preceding second person singulars in the dialogue text: “upon thee,” “overshadow thee.” Here, Amphilochius’ text of the New Testament is earlier than that of the Peshitta.2

Father Raymond E. Brown in *The Birth of the Messiah* sees the verse having a double role: first, as part of the angel’s message and his reassurance to Mary after her objection; secondly and more importantly, he states that “more clearly than Matthew, Luke speaks of Jesus as the ‘Son of God’ in 35.”3 His remarks on verse 35 are close to what Amphilochius understood

---


as the context of the text, that is, "all early Christian christology was vocalized in the reinterpreted terms of Jewish expectations."1

Brown also sees the text as having a relation to the description of the Davidic Messiah. This is, of course, one of the main points in this thesis. Brown further relates the text to Romans 1: 3-4, which also is a text used by the Fathers to show Christ's human origins within the Davidic line; even the holiness or consecratory notion is present in Romans 1: 4 "designated Son of God in power according to the Holy Spirit (Spirit of Holiness) as of the resurrection from the dead."2 Brown's conclusion is helpful in establishing an insistence on the Davidic origins which the Fathers give to Jesus and Mary.3 If, as Brown maintains, there is a real begetting of the child as God's Son—and there is no adoption here—then Amphilochius perfectly understood and interpreted the text in this manner.4 A final point contained in the thought of Amphilochius is consonant with what Brown has interpreted Luke as saying.

In the Lucan annunciation there is no real contrast between the two parts of Gabriel's message: the Son of the Most High in whom the Davidic royal promise is fulfilled is the child to be called the Son of God, conceived through the Holy Spirit and power. By moving the christological moment from the resurrection to the conception, Luke tells us that there never was a moment on this earth when Jesus was not the Son of God.5 Amphilochius attested to this interpretation already in the fourth century.

1 Ibid., p. 311.
2 Ibid., p. 312. Yet, O. Procksch, ἁγιος (ThWKitTEL [Eng] I: 101), sees it as referring only to the origin of Jesus: "With τὸ γεννώμενον, ἁγιον here belongs to the subject, for the predicate is ὁ ἅγιος θεοῦ; but the expression τὸ γεννώμενον ἁγιον is to be explained by the supranatural origin of the new life, which is called ὁ ἅγιος θεοῦ because of its origin, so that ὁ ἅγιος θεοῦ is here a predicate which is not grounded in the Messianic office of Christ but in his origin." Also note that ἁγιος as an expression for Christ is rare (Mk. 1: 24; Lk. 1: 35, 4: 34; Jn. 6: 69; 1 Jn. 2: 20; Rev. 3: 7; Acts 3: 14; 4: 27, 30). In Amphilochius it is only used here of Christ though it is used almost seventy-five times in his writings.
3 Ibid., p. 313: "The conglomeration of terms . . . in the second half of the Romans formula (designation as Son of God, power, Holy Spirit) is remarkably like the conglomeration of terms in the second half of the angelic message reported in Luke 1: 35 (called Son of God, power, Holy Spirit)."
4 Ibid., pp. 313-314. "... Mary is a virgin who has not known man, and therefore the child is totally God's work—a new creation." (p. 314)
5 Ibid., pp. 315-316.
2. Luke 2: 6-7 (Oratio I: 3, ll. 100-104): While they were there, the days of her confinement were completed. She gave birth to her firstborn son and wrapped him in swaddling clothes and laid him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the place where travelers lodged.

The only variant presented in this lengthy quotation from Luke is Amphilochius’ use of the conjunction *γάρ* in place of the *δὲ* adversative and copulative particle. For homiletic purposes, on the feast of the Birth of Christ Amphilochius has chosen the one text in Luke which directly refers to the birth of Mary’s firstborn. The text has to be seen in what has preceded it and what follows it. It is preceded by the important prophetic text of Isaiah 9: 5b: “Upon his shoulders dominion rests; they name him Wonder-Counselor, God-Hero, . . . His dominion is vast and forever peaceful . . .”1 The origins of Jesus are seen in the use of Numbers 24: 17: “A star shall arise out of Jacob”2 and a heavenly man who has appeared from Israel.” Amphilochius has truncated and added titles to the text making them refer to Christ. He adds another orchestrated text (Mal. 3: 20) the “sun of justice who overshadows,”3 “the Orient from on high which illumines,” and finally the “Lord proceeding from the virginal womb.”4 This heaping up of titles for the newborn Christ (both from the Old and the New Testaments) ends by stating the purpose of the birth which is always soteriological (“for the redemption of the world he came into the world as a mortal man.”5 The New Testament text from Luke 2: 11, 326 (See below.) follows, for it is the reality of Christ now completing the titles of the promise with new titles in the dispensation of fulfillment. After a series of contrasts—he who contained the world is held in a woman’s arms, he who limited the heavens lies is a manger, and is nursed at the Virgin’s breast?”—Amphilochius turns to our text which expresses the reality of Jesus’ being born of Mary.

Fr. Raymond E. Brown maintains Luke is very laconic in describing this event.8 There is no hint in Amphilochius or the other Fathers that a

---

1 Or. I. In Natalitia Domini: 3, ll. 78-82.
2 Ibid., ll. 87-88.
3 Ibid., l. 89.
4 Ibid., ll. 92-93.
5 Ibid., ll. 93-94.
6 Ibid., ll. 94-95.
7 Ibid., ll. 96-100.
8 R. E. BROWN, op. cit., p. 418.
midrash of Genesis 3: 18 was known to them; neither Amphilochius nor any other Father says that the facts are presented from Mary’s viewpoint as McHugh infers. Nor is the term “firstborn” indicative that the Fathers saw Mary as having other children. In fact, none of the Fathers cited uses this text as a controversial one. McHugh’s remarks about the term are helpful towards understanding the background of the use of the term “firstborn.”

What follows the citing of Luke 2: 6-7 is that the redemption brought about by this Child’s birth is a strategic victory over the devil. The world is assured of liberty through a virgin (Ἡ λευθέρωται κόσμος διὰ παρθένου) whereas formerly a virgin had put it under sin (διὰ ταύτης τὸ πρῶτοφάτο τῆν ἀμαρτίαν πρώτην [Oratio I: 3, ll. 108-109]).

Thus, Amphilochius uses Luke 2: 6-7 as a fulfillment text for the prophetic promises, and as a verification of the reality of the human birth of a child who effects total redemption.

3. Luke 2:11 (Oratio I: 3, ll. 94-95): A savior has been born to you, the Messiah and Lord.

Amphilochius has applied the text to his immediate audience for it reads, “A savior has been born for us today, who is Christ and Lord.” Luke reads: Ὅτι ἐτέχθη ὃμιν (for to you is born) while Amphilochius has Ἐγεννήθη γὰρ ἥμιν (has been born for us). He has not coupled the phrase ἐν Πόλει Δαβίδ (in the city of David).

The immediate context has the citation within the soteriological purpose of the Incarnation: “For the Lord of the heavens and the earth has come from the virginal womb as a mortal man for the redemption of the world.” The context is one of universal salvation. Amphilochius cites the title “light of the nations” which is Luke’s exclusive term (except for Isaiah 49: 6) for Christ and his explanation of the apostolic mission of Paul and Barnabas.

1 Ibid., p. 419.
3 Ibid., p. 201.
4 Ibid., pp. 203-204.
Brown sees Isaiah 9: 5 as the primary background for this text:

The primary background seems to be Isa. 9: 5 (6): “To us a child is born; to us a son is given.” In the Isaian context this child is the heir to the throne of David, and his royal titles follow: Wonderful Counselor, Divine Hero, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace. Luke has taken over this Isaian birth announcement of the heir to the throne of David; but for the OT titulary he has substituted three titles taken from the Christian kerygma: Savior, Messiah (Christ), Lord.¹

This is precisely what Amphilochius has done, even citing Isaiah 9: 5 (Oratio I: 3, ll. 78-82). Isaiah 9: 5 is another example of text orchestration.

The contrast which Amphilochius develops in the same section of his homily can have been intended in Luke as well.²

4. Luke 2: 21-23 (Oratio II: 2, ll. 39-44): And it came about that when the eight days were accomplished to circumcise the child, they called his name Jesus, which the angel had called him before he was conceived. And when the days of their purification were over, they brought him to the temple and presented him to the Lord, just as it is written in the law of the Lord “Every male opening the womb shall be called holy to the Lord.”

The above text of Amphilochius differs somewhat from the preferred reading today. The notable differences are:

(1) An addition of ἡγένετο before δέ in line 39. But ἡγένετο is characteristic of Luke in the Infancy Narrative. (2) Amphilochius makes the eight days definite by adding αἱ to ἡμέραι ὀκτώ. (3) He also makes the expression more concrete by saying τὸ παιδίον in place of the pronoun αὐτὸν. (4) He omits ἐν τῇ κοιλίᾳ after συλλημφθήσαν. (5) In the light of Datema’s critical edition of the text we must retain αὐτῶν.³ (6) The expres-

² M. Hengel, φάτνη, in ThWκιττελ (Eng) IX: 54-55: “For Luke the manger expresses the contrast between the world-ruler Augustus and the hidden and lowly birth of the world-redeemer (Luke 2:1, 11, 14). Finally it points forward to the way of humility and suffering which is taken by the Son of God who ‘hath not where to lay his head,’ Lk. 9: 58.” Cf. Tertullian, De Carne Christi, 2 (CSEL LXIX: 191 [1939]): “Aufer hinc ... molestos semper Caesaris census et diversoria angusta et sordidos pannos et dura praesepia.”
³ B. M. Metzger, op. cit., p. 134: “The reading αὐτῶν, which is by far the best attested reading, is difficult, for the Law prescribes no ritual of purification for the husband. The reading αὐτής (which, in the editions of Theodore Beza, lies behind the AV.) is a late correction made by a punctilious scribe. The Western reading αὐτῷ can be regarded as a transcriptional error for αὐτῶν (in cursive Greek script the pronoun was abbreviated
sion κατὰ τὸν νόμον Μωϋσέως is omitted by Amphilochius. (7) And, more in keeping with his intention, the text reads εἰς τὸ ἱερὸν (into the temple) instead of ἱεροσόλυμα. (8) He reads καὶ παρέστησαν (and they presented him to the Lord) instead of the infinitive παραστῆσαι, (9) ἐστὶ γεγενημένον instead of γέγεναται, and (10), curiously, reads ἄρσεν in place of ἄρσεν.1

The primary context is not the celebration of the Feast of Hypapante, as well noted by C. Datema in his introduction (p. xiii). The primitive title of the homily was “On the Theotokos and on Simeon and Anna”; but it later became a favorite homily for the feast of Hypapante.

The context of Amphilochius’ use of the text is in extolling the honor of marriage, virginity, and widowhood.2 But the fruit of marriage and virginity for Mary and Joseph, especially the offering of the Child Jesus as the first fruit of the womb, manifests a unique fulfillment of the Jewish ritual; its deepest meaning is that the Lord Jesus alone is holy.3

Brown also helps us to understand why Amphilochius would use the reference to the circumcision with the purification/presentation scene.4

5. Luke 2:32 (Oratio I: 3, l. 95): ... a revealing light to the Gentiles, the glory of your people Israel.

In his first homily, Amphilochius is citing the text in part; he is also paraphrasing it. He has retained the “light of the nations” and “Israel.” This text is seen in the continued sense of redemption (καὶ σωτηρία οἴκου Ἰσραήλ) (and salvation for the house of Israel).5 We have seen above that only Luke uses the expression “light of the nations” in the New Testament and only on two occasions.6

αὗτος with the termination expressed by a “shorthand” stroke), or as a deliberate modification, introduced because afterwards (ver. 27) Jesus is the object of the presentation in the Temple.

1 Or. II. In Occursum Domini: 2, ll. 39-44 (CCG 3: 41); also note the critical apparatus quoting the manuscripts for each reading.
2 Ibid., 1, ll. 29-34.
3 Ibid., 2, l. 37 and ll. 44-48.
4 R. E. Brown, op. cit., p. 432: “Indeed the circumcision/naming is so intermediary that it can be treated either with the birth scene or with the purification/presentation.”
5 Or. I. In Natalitia Domini: 3, l. 95.
6 J. Jeremias, πατὴρ Ὀσε, in ThWKittel (Eng) V: 706, n. 403: “The phrase in Lk. 2: 32: φως εἰς ἀποκάλυψιν διδόνων, is based on a servant text (βλέποντος ἔως) which is literally the same in Is. 42: 6 and 49: 6, though the combination of Gentiles and Israel (Lk. 2: 32ab) shows that Is. 49: 6 is the closer.” Cf. R. E. Brown (op. cit., p. 440), who sees...
6. Luke 2: 34-35 (Oratio II: 8, ll. 192-259): This child is destined to be the downfall and the rise of many in Israel, a sign that will be opposed and you yourself shall be pierced with a sword so that the thoughts of many hearts may be laid bare.¹

Amphilochius constantly returns to the main text of his homily (In Occursum Domini) Luke 2: 21-38. In section eight, he looks at the text wherein Simeon speaks to Mary of the sword of sorrow which will pierce her heart. His interpretation is that the sign of contradiction is the cross;² the sword of sorrow piercing Mary's heart is the great number of thoughts which inveigh against her mind³—innumerable thoughts which resemble a sword piercing her heart and entering her inmost recesses. All of section eight is a profound biblical meditation on the words of Simeon—possibly the finest ever made.

Amphilochius' text is in perfect agreement with the accepted critical text of today, the only difference is the presence of parentheses for verse 35ab: (“and you yourself shall be pierced with a sword”).⁴

De Groot has interpreted Amphilochius in his work on Luke 2: 35.⁵ His fifth point is of interest: Amphilochius gives the reason for her suffering—these afflictions had befallen her for she had not yet experienced the power of the resurrection nor did she know the resurrection was near.⁶

The development of Mary's troubled thoughts is consonant with the image of a human's struggle and offer her as a model of faith acceptable to today's mentality. She is not put beyond the reach of normal human faith struggles. Amphilochius, moreover, in no way passes a moral judgment on these troubled thoughts or doubts of Mary.⁷


¹ Amphilochius' text has no parentheses for 2: 35ab: Or. II. In Occursum Domini, CCG 3: 63-69; text, Or, II: 8, ll. 192-194; branches of text, Or. II: 8, ll. 194-195, 196-198, 204-205, 210-214, 221.
² Or. II. In Occursum Domini: 8, ll. 214-215.
³ Ibid., ll. 228-229.
⁵ A. DE GROOT, Die schmerzhafte Mutter und Gefährtin des göttlichen Erlösers in der Weissagung Simeons (Lk. 2: 35) (Kaldenkirchen: Steyler, 1956).
⁶ Ibid., p. 16. (Cf. his entire interpretation, pp. 14-16, which is excellent.)
⁷ Ibid., p. 16, c and d.
McHugh has an excellent page\(^1\) on the purpose of “signs” in the New Testament. He cites Luke 2: 34 wherein Jesus is a “sign that will be contradicted.” The cross is the most effective of these signs. In a sense, Amphilochius has brought out this meaning in the present pericope.

Modern commentators say the words of Simeon echo Isaiah 8: 14.\(^2\) We shall return to that text later in Hesychius of Jerusalem.

For a rapid survey of the opinion on inmost thoughts, Brown’s notes are helpful.\(^3\) However, Amphilochius does not interpret these thoughts as bad! Brown could have used Amphilochius in listing some of his citations on this verse in order to show there were more positive interpretations which were not poor methodologically.\(^4\)

7. Luke 2: 38 (Oratio II: 5, ll. 120-123): The Evangelist has spoken as you have just heard: And this one, Anna, at the same hour, coming in, confessed to the Lord and spoke to all who were looking for redemption in Jerusalem.

The text of Amphilochius is adapted to the listeners, for he reintroduces Anna by name in these verses; he reads τῷ θεῷ τηνιέω (to the Lord) in place of τῷ Θεῷ (to God) and omits the περὶ αὐτοῦ (concerning him) found in the majority of manuscripts.\(^5\)

The text is chosen for it has the important notion of redemption: λόγῳ σωτήριον ἐν Ἰερουσαλημ (salvation in Jerusalem). This is the soteriological aspect of the mystery of Christ’s birth and childhood. As we have seen, it is the predominant interpretation of the Fathers of this epoch when they are speaking of the purpose of Christ’s birth.

The term λόγῳ σωτήριον in the New Testament (and especially in our present text Luke 2: 38) is the redemption which is awaited for Israel or Jerusalem. It is virtually the same as σωτηρία. It refers in Luke to a redeemer, that is, to a person (Jesus).\(^6\)

---

\(^1\) J. McHugh, op. cit., p. 88. (Cf. n. 19, where he cites the sign of Jonah—Amphilochius, likewise, in Or. II. In Occursum Domini: 8, II. 243-247.)


\(^3\) R. E. Brown, op. cit., p. 441.

\(^4\) Ibid., pp. 462-463.

\(^5\) ALANDGNT, p. 216. (Cf. critical apparatus.)

Amphilochius uses \( \lambda \nu \tau \rho \omega \sigma \varsigma \) three times;\(^1\) \( \lambda \nu \tau \varrho \delta \omega \), once.\(^2\) It is from these uses that the interpretation of these lines is offered. The verb form need not concern us since it is used simply in a phrase saying "freed or released from groaning or sighing from the sorrows Eve had caused."

In his homily on the birth of Christ, Amphilochius uses the expression \( \dot{\alpha} \pi \dot{e} \rho \kappa \dot{o} \mu \sigma \nu \lambda \nu \tau \rho \omega \sigma \varepsilon \omega \varsigma \) (for the world's salvation)\(^3\) in the context of the redemptive effect brought about by the Lord who is the sun of justice (Mal. 3: 20),\(^4\) the shoot of everlasting life (Zech. 6: 12),\(^5\) the star which has arisen from on high,\(^6\) the heavenly man,\(^7\) and the God-Warrior.\(^8\) Amphilochius has heaped up titles from the Old Testament which have been fulfilled in Christ on the occasion of his birth,\(^9\) and, likewise, on the occasion of his presentation in the temple.\(^10\) He also has given us another orchestration of favored texts.

In the context of his second homily the term \( \lambda \nu \tau \rho \omega \sigma \varsigma \) is directly taken from the biblical text of Luke 2: 38 and Amphilochius shows that Anna, the widow who pondered over what the priests and scribes had failed to comprehend, makes known in Jerusalem its salvation (through the person of the Child Jesus).\(^11\) The last line of the section confirms this interpretation, for Anna confesses the Child (\( \tau \omicron \ Beta \rho \omicron \omicron \varsigma \) to be the healer, the strong redeemer (\( \lambda \nu \tau \rho \omega \tau \varsigma \nu \omicron \iota \chi \varsigma \varsigma \omicron \omicron \)\(^12\) and the destroyer of sin.


This text has been chosen by Amphilochius in order to show the salvific purpose of Christ's activity among mankind. The text is used to conclude the fourth section of his Oratio I on the birth of Christ, in which Amphilochius shows the purpose of Christ in assuming from the Virgin Mary\(^13\) his human

---

1 Or. I: 3, 1. 93; Or. II: 5, 1. 127; Or. VI: 2, 1. 32.
2 Or. II. In Occursum Domini: 1, 1. 9.
3 Or. I. In Natalitia Domini: 3, 1. 94.
4 Ibid., 1. 89.
5 Ibid., 1. 91 (Zach. 6:12).
6 Ibid., ll. 91-92.
7 Ibid., 1. 88 (Dan. 7: 13 implicit).
8 Ibid., 1. 89 (Isa. 9: 5).
9 Or. I. In Natalitia Domini.
10 Or. II. In Occursum Domini.
11 Ibid., 5, 1. 127.
12 Ibid., 1. 132.
13 Or. I. In Natalitia Domini: 4, ll. 116-117.
nature which was made bodily substantive for the Word of God ("Ω ἄνθρωπότης, ἡ τὸν ἄνθιον τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγον σωματικός σώσισα: O humanity, which was made bodily substantive for the Word of God). The term salvation is also used for the healing of the sickness of sin brought about by Christ as "doctor." Datema has chosen Luke 5:31 as the correct biblical reference over the parallel favored in the Migne edition which used Matthew 9:12. Only Luke uses the term ὑγιαίνοντες (those in good health) for ἴσχοντες (those who are strong) in this proverb used by Jesus. What is significant is that Jesus shows himself to be Victor over sin and suffering by his deeds. In fact, in another homily of Amphilochius, Jesus heals the paralytic who in turn replies he is healthy because of the action of Jesus.

The word ᾿λατρός (physician, doctor) is favored by Amphilochius in his looking at Jesus as a savior. Perhaps the best parallel is the text from his second homily in which Anna confesses the Child (Jesus) as God, "doctor," and mighty redeemer.

In his Oratio IV he extols Christ as the doctor who lays his hands on all kinds of suffering. Perhaps more than the other Fathers studied, Amphilochius treats of the ministry of this healing Savior.

B. Old Testament:

1. Isaiah 7:14: The Virgin shall be with child and give birth to a son, and they shall call him Emmanuel, a name which means "God is with us."

Amphilochius uses this most important text once in his homily In Natalitia Domini. It does not appear in the other works which have sur-

---

1 Ibid., ll. 117-118.
2 Ibid., ll. 125-126.
3 O. Luck, ὑγιής, in ThWKittel (Eng) VIII: 312.
4 Ibid.
5 Or. IX. In Illud: Non Potest Filius a se Facere: 3, ll. 66-67 (CCG 3: 1177). (Cf. ὑγείας, Or. I: 4, l. 125; ὑγείας, Or.IV: 5, l. 162; ὑγιαίνοντες, Or. I: 4, l. 123 and ὑγιάσατα, Or. IX: 2, l. 48; ὑγιής, Or. IX: 3, l. 65.)
6 Or. II. In Occursum Domini: 5, ll. 131-132: Θεὸν ὀμολογησεν τό βρέφος ἢ "Ἀννα, ἱατρός, λατρωτὴν ἴσχυν, ἀμαρτιῶν ἀναιήσεται."
7 Or. IV. In Mulierem Peccatrix: 2, l. 57. (Cf. "Where may I find a doctor who takes away all suffering?" Or. IV: 5, l. 150; 9, l. 342bis.)
8 He uses ἵδομαι seven times, ἱατρεύω once, ἱατρικός once, ἱατρός ten times. (Cf. GCS 3: 352.)
9 Or. I. In Natalitia Domini: 2, ll. 60-62.
vived under his name. Since this text will be discussed at length under John Chrysostom, only a few remarks are made:

First, Amphilochius is citing it directly from Matthew 1: 23, the only differences being that he does not introduce it with “behold” (Ἰού), and the “v” is lacking in his text for καλέσουσι and ἐστιν, which is perfectly acceptable in Greek. Not one of these three differences changes his interpretation.

Secondly, the text is used as a fulfillment of the promise and prophecy God makes through Isaiah. This is the context within Matthew; Amphilochius is simply doing the same. He is in accord with the writers of the New Testament who use Isaiah more often than any other prophet. Already we have seen that Amphilochius is relying heavily on Isaian passages for this part of his homily. The Isaiah 7: 14 text is immediately followed by Isaiah, 9: 5; methodically in his meditative reflections, he takes up these texts, first, in referring to the Virgin, then to the true humanity of the Child who is born and given. Again an orchestration of desired texts comes into the homily.

Perhaps the Fathers of this epoch were making use of a collection of texts on the Incarnation which were similar to the so-called “TESTIMONIA” used by the writers of the New Testament. If so, they were following a long-standing biblical tradition for using texts, especially texts from Isaiah.

2. Isaiah 9: 5: A son is born for us, a son is given to us, upon whose shoulder is the government, and his name is called Messenger of Great Counsel, Wonderful in Counsel, God the Mighty, Final Authority, Ruler of Peace, the Everlasting Father.

Amphilochius uses this important Messianic text in three of his homilies, two of which have been extensively analyzed in this study. The text Am-

---

1 ALANDGNT, pp. 910-913.
2 Or. I. In Natalitia Domini: 2, ll. 63-65.
3 Ibid., ll. 67-68.
4 Ibid., ll. 69-73.
5 JBC, p. 550, 68: 79: “‘Testimonia,’ a term taken from the title of a work by Cyprian, is the designation for systematic collections of OT passages, usually of Messianic import, which are thought to have been used by the early Christians in their arguments with the Jews. These were proof-texts culled from the OT to show that Jesus was the Messiah.”
6 Or. I. In Natalitia Domini: 2, ll. 63-66; 3, ll. 78-82, l. 89 and Or. II. In Occursum Domini: 6, l. 161.
philochius cites is not represented by the Codex Vaticanus. He has the
lengthier reading, as given above.

Within the context of his homily, it serves as a confirmation text for the
fact that the Child born from the Virgin possesses all of the great titles fore-
told by Isaiah. Amphilochius, in the development of his discourse, affirms
the Child is named with all these titles. He returns especially to the title,
\( \delta \ i\zeta x\upsilon \iota \delta \varepsilon \iota \varepsilon \) (Mighty God). His second homily uses the text to confirm
the reality of Christ's birth—"a son is born for us," a fact which is visible to
our eyes, and "is given to us," which is known by the mind and thought
alone.

This text may be at the basis of the statement from Micah (5: 1-3)
that the birth of the Messianic son of David takes place at Bethlehem, thereby
stressing the equality of the Messianic son with David himself. The final
Davidic ruler would be God's representative on earth. Isaiah 9: 5f. is the
oldest passage to set forth this Messianic expectation; as such, the text
refers to an outstanding savior of the house of David who represents the
last event in history.

The Septuagint has indicated that formerly the Alexandrian Jews were
expecting this coming of a divine messenger. Amphilochius repeats this
title in his ninth homily, indicating that he understood it as an impor-
tant Messianic title.

The giving of a name, or, as we have in Isaiah 9: 5f., the conferring
of many names, guarantees God's grace and salvation. This is clearly
perceived in Amphilochius' second homily.

---

1 RAHLFS, II: 578, critical apparatus. (Cf. H. SASS, \textit{alwv}, in ThWK\textsc{ittel} [Eng] I:
206, n. 33 and, especially, G. BERTRAM, \textit{bapuma}, in ThWK\textsc{ittel} [Eng] III: 32.)
2 Or. \textit{I. In Natalitia Domini}: 2, ll. 60-62 and ll. 68-73.
3 \textit{Ibid.}, 3, l. 80.
4 \textit{Ibid.}, l. 89.
5 Or. \textit{II. In Occursur Domini}: 6, ll. 161-163.
6 F. HESE, \textit{Xe\iota}, in ThWK\textsc{ittel} (Eng) IX: 508.
7 \textit{Ibid.}, p. 506.
8 J. SCHNEIWIND, \textit{\textgamma\varepsilon\iota\iota\iota}, in ThWK\textsc{ittel} (Eng) I: 57 and n. 6 for related material
especially, "Or. c. Cels., II, 70 p. 192, 12 f., Koetschau [Bau J. 9, 206]"). Also, cf. W.
ZIMMERLI, \textit{\textpi\ai\zeta \Theta\omicron\iota\upsilon\upsilon}, in ThWK\textsc{ittel} (Eng) V: 676 on LXX Messianic understanding.
9 Or. \textit{IX. In Iltud: Non Potest Filius a Se Facere}: 2, l. 40: \( \delta \ \mu\epsilon\gamma\alpha\lambda\eta\varsigma \ \beta\omicron\upsilon\lambda\zeta\varsigma \ \delta\gamma\gamma\epsilon\lambda\omicron\varsigma\).
10 H. Bietenhard, \textit{\textdamma}, in ThWK\textsc{ittel} (Eng) V: 234.
11 Or. \textit{II. In Occursur Domini}: 6, ll. 161-163.
Biblical scholars have associated Isaiah 7: 14 with the text of Isaiah 9: 5, a correlation which was not neglected by Amphilochius or Chrysostom. Another implicit correlation is found in the Isaian text which reads “for us.” This refers to the remnant and the coming of the Messiah as indicated in Isaiah 9: 5 being in the process of enactment. The prophet also says that the Messiah will be given “us” (7: 10 ff. “Immanuel,” 9: 5 twice “to us”). The “for us” can only be the remnant whose presence is referred to in Isaiah 8: 16-18.

The notion of a son in relationship to his father is present in the text. This, of course, opens up parallels with other Messianic texts, especially Psalm 2: 7 and Psalm 110: 3. In the Old Testament, the king is called God’s son on three occasions. These texts influence the Isaiah 9: 5 ff. Messianic promise.

Finally, the title of Mighty God is important for Amphilochius. He used it three times within the main section of his homily on the birth of Christ. In his understanding, Amphilochius is close to what the Scriptures, especially Isaiah, say of the Messiah. This can be linked with the effective healing power of Christ which has already been noted as a strong theme within Amphilochius. In summary, however, it is probably correct to infer that all of the titles used in Isaiah 9: 5 and in Amphilochius are of equal value.

3. Malachai 3: 20 (Sun of Justice): “. . . the sun of justice will arise. . . .”

Amphilochius uses the title of sun of justice for Christ who has come forth from a virginal womb. He is not alone in using this title in festival homilies. As we have seen, this is one more title which the homilist has heaped up in proclaiming the message of this festival day. It should be noted that Amphilochius uses this text four times in his works. The texts affirm the title is always understood of Christ in a salvific sense; for example, in his homily on the sinful woman the sun of justice overcomes all aspects of sin; and in his

---

1 G. Delling, παρθένος, in THW KITTEL (Eng) V: 832.
2 V. Henstrich, λείμµα, in THW KITTEL (Eng) IV: 205, 208-209.
4 W. Grundmann, δόναμαίδόναμι, in THW KITTEL (Eng) II: 299 ff.
5 G. von Rad, ελόγην, in THW KITTEL (Eng) II: 405-406.
6 Or. I. In Natalitia Domini: 3, I. 89.
7 Ibid. Or. IV. In Mutierem Peccatricem: 2, I. 66; Or. V. In Diem Sabbati Sancti: 3, I. 63; Or. VII. De Recens Baptizatis: 5, I. 159.
8 Or. IV: 2, I. 66-67.
sermon to the recently baptized, it illumines and warms (through the baptismal waters).  

4. Baruch 3: 38: Since then he (she) has appeared on earth and moved among men.

In the tradition of the Fathers studied within this thesis, the text of Baruch 3: 38: "Since then she has appeared upon earth and moved among men" (μετὰ τοῦτο ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς ὄψη καὶ ἐν τοῖς ἀνθρώποις συνανεστράφη) is among the most favored texts applied to the mystery of the Incarnation. It is frequently orchestrated with Isaiah 7: 14.

Though within its biblical context the phrase is a continuation of the description of Wisdom (feminine), the Fathers have used it for Christ in His Incarnation, thus changing the gender of its antecedent, Wisdom.

The two earliest appearances of the text in reference to the Incarnation are found in Clement of Alexandria² and Hippolytus.³ It is the latter who clearly states that the entire section of the Scripture's Baruch 3: 36-38⁴ was used by Noetus and Theodotus to speak of Christ; unfortunately, the text was used to support their heretical statement: "Christ is the Father, if He is God, therefore the Father suffered."⁵

Hippolytus refutes the textual interpretation of Noetus; the Scriptures are correct. Noetus, however, uses the text otherwise.⁶

---

¹ Or. VII: 5, I. 159.
³ HIPPOLYTUS, Contra Noel., II: PG 10: 805; Contra Noel., V: PG 10: 809.
⁴ Ibid., PG 10: 805B. "Such is our God; no other is to be compared to him: He has traced out all the way of understanding, and has given her to Jacob, his servant, to Israel, his beloved son. Since then she (he) has appeared on earth, and moved among men" (Bar. 3: 36-38, New American Bible).
⁵ Ibid., PG 10: 805B ab initio. (Cf. M. SIMONETTI, La Crisi Ariana nel IV secolo, Augustinianum 11 [Rome: Institutum Patristicum Augustinianum, 1975], p. 8, n. 18: "HIPP., Noel. 7. 15. Tert., Prax. 7, 6; 20. Da Ippolito [Noet. 2] apprendiamo che in questo modo i monarchiani interpretavano anche Bar. 3, 36-38 ‘Questo è il nostro Dio e non sarà considerato altro accanto a lui... Dopo è apparso in terra e se è intrattenuto con gli uomini.’ e. Is. 45: 14 ‘... perché in te c'è Dio: a te rivolgeranno le loro preghiere, perché non c'è Dio fuori di te’: si tratta di due passi che troveremo adoperati nel IV secolo in senso antariano, stante l'interpretazione antimonarchiana fornita da Ippolito [Noet. 4.5] e Tertulliano [Prax. 13, 2; 16, 3], distinguendo Dio Padre dal Dio incarnato.")
⁶ Ibid., PG 10: 808A.
From the third century on, the text is used more often for the Incarnation. By the time of the era of the writers and preachers studied in this thesis, it has become a traditional text for use in Nativity and Incarnational sermons and tracts. Unfortunately, today it is glibly passed over in commentaries as a text which was erroneously applied to the Incarnation or doctrine on the Logos by the Fathers—even being a Christian interpolation.¹

There seem to be two possible reasons for the choice of the text in Incarnational thought and interpretation, the first being the Wisdom-Logos context, and, the second, the servant of God or πατὴρ Θεοῦ context. For the first concept we turn to Athanasius, who speaks of the relationship Wisdom has with the Word of God and the relationship of other Scriptural texts to Baruch 3: 38. Athanasius' thought contains in seed-form what will be developed by the later Greek Fathers of the Church.

Athanasius is commenting on John 17: 3 (“And this is eternal life, that they know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent.”). Here is the text:

“And we know that the Son of God has come and has given us understanding, to know Him who is true, in His Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God and eternal life.” (I John 5: 20) Therefore, the Son is true God before He becomes man, and after He has become the man Christ Jesus He is the mediator of God and of men. This is indeed what He says, and whom He has sent Jesus Christ, united to the Father according to the Spirit, and to us truly according to the flesh; and so He is mediator of God and of men. Who not only is man, but also is God, just in the manner that Jeremias says: “THIS IS OUR GOD; NO OTHER CAN COMPARE WITH HIM. HE GRASPED THE WHOLE WAY TO KNOWLEDGE, AND GAVE HER TO HIS SERVANT JACOB AND TO ISRAEL WHOM HE LOVED. AFTER THAT (HE) APPEARED ON EARTH AND LIVED AMONG MEN.” When then did He live among men unless it be when He was born with them of a woman, became an infant among them, grew with them, and ate with them?²

² Athanasius, De Incarnatione et Contra Haereticos, PG 26: 1024-1025. N. B. Simonetti, op. cit., p. 277, n. 79, has to be corrected in the light of Baruch 3: 38 (actually the more important verse of the text): “Va sottolineata, comunque, in Atanasio—come negli altri teologi antiariani—la grande utilizzazione del IV Vangelo. Atanasio si serve solo occasionalmente di Io. 5, 26 (CA 3, 36), che abbiamo visto così importante nella teologia omeousiana. Rileviamo ancora l'assenza di Bar. 3, 36, mentre è utilizzato Is. 45, 14 (CA 2, 23; Serap. 2, 4), che sappiamo di norma affiancato in questo tempo al passo di Baruch.”

272
Athanasius then cites texts to confirm what he is saying (*Jeremiah* 17: 9; *Isaiah* 9: 6; *Isaiah* 7: 14). These latter two texts are the texts which Chrysostom uses. Then in a doctrinal summary these splendid words of Athanasius are given: "Therefore he is God who is born of a Virgin and is made man of the God-bearing Mary."  

For the second biblical concept of παῖς Θεοῦ we turn to the text itself wherein the expression is found, then the obvious correlation the Fathers discovered with Isaiah 9: 15 which is so often used with Baruch 3: 36-38. Verse 37 reads: "He has traced out all the way of understanding, and has given her to Jacob, his servant, to Israel, his beloved son." The expression *child of God* occurs rarely in Jewish literature after 100 B.C., but it is present in Baruch 1: 20; 2: 20, 24, 28; 3: 37. The meaning of "Child of God" is possible for this verse; it is also in Wisdom 2: 13. The context also leaves room for the second meaning of παῖς Θεοῦ namely, servant of God, and the Lukan text 1: 54 compared with Luke 1: 69 leads to the same conclusion. The Fathers are fond of the text of Isaiah 9: 5: δικαὶ παιδίον γεννήθη ἡμῖν, νιῶς καὶ ἄδοθη ἡμῖν (because a child is born for us, a son is given to us), and use it with the Baruch 3: 36-38 text.

Since all of the appearances of Baruch 3: 36-38 in the Fathers studied will be discussed, it is now time to turn to Amphilochius’ use of the text. It appears only once within his writings, and, as would be expected, in the homily entitled *In Natalitia Domini*. The text is used within those parts of his homily in which the prophets foretold that God would be seen, that He would be with mankind—Emmanuel, and that, concretely, a child, possessing the titles of God, would be born and given to mankind. The texts referred to are Baruch 3: 38, *Isaiah* 63: 9, *Isaiah* 7: 14 (Mt. 1: 23), and *Isaiah* 9: 5. These promises are fulfilled in the birth of Christ. Amphilochius concludes the section with his purpose for using these texts: “From these words you now have knowledge of the mode of [his] presence.”

2 J. *Jeremias, παῖς Θεοῦ, in ThWKittel (Eng) V: 677.  
3 Ibid., p. 678. (Cf. n. 149: "We should possibly add Bar. 3: 37—lines 34 ff.")  
4 Ibid., p. 679.  
5 Or. I. *In Natalitia Domini*: 2, II. 51-52.  
6 Ibid.  
7 Ibid., II. 54-55.  
8 Ibid., II. 60-62.  
9 Ibid., II. 63-66.  
10 Ibid., II. 66-67.
virginal conception and the condescension of the Word of God are then mentioned in the soteriological purpose of such an Incarnation.¹

Thus Amphilochius has used texts from the common treasury of an already long existing tradition: from Matthew 1: 23 and John 1: 14 through Hippolytus, Clement of Alexandria, Origen, and Athanasius. Baruch 3: 38 is to be understood as an essential text for the Church of that time.²

5. Numbers 24: 17: O Day to be celebrated by innumerable hymns, in which a star has risen for us out of Jacob and the heavenly man who has appeared out of Israel.³

This text is clearly a Messianic one for Amphilochius. He uses the first part of the third stich and three words from the fourth stich within the context of the celebration of the feast of the Nativity and as a source for more messianic titles for Christ which he gathers for this section of the discourse. All of the Old Testament texts which surround this citation are also Messianic: Isaiah 9: 5bis,⁴ and Malachai 3: 20,⁵ and Zechariah 6: 12.⁶ He may intend the text to be linked with that of Baruch 3: 38, for the word ἀφητήν (appeared) occurs as well as the ἔστω Ἰακώβ and ἔστω Ἰσραήλ found within Baruch 3: 37.

The expression ἀνατολή (ἀνατέλλω) “the rising (from the east)” or “to come forth and arise” is associated with the Messiah. From the close proximity of the text (Numbers 24: 17) to Zechariah 6: 12, we may infer that Amphilochius is dependent on the same tradition as Justin Martyr⁷ and Melito of Sardis.⁸ The former understands the ἀνατολή of Zechariah 6: 12 in terms of the ἀνατέλλειν of the LXX in Numbers 24: 17 so that the advent of Christ is the rising of a star. Melito uses the expression as found in Luke 1: 78 “the morning sun from heaven will rise” in reference to the heavenly light in Christ as Messiah and the sun of the world. The text of Malachai 3: 20 immediately fits this context and is used by Amphilochius. It is not

¹ Ibid., II. 67-73.
⁴ Ibid., II. 78-82, I. 89.
⁵ Ibid., I. 89.
⁶ Ibid., I. 91.
⁷ JUSTIN, Dial. 100, 4; 106, 4; 121, 2; 126, 1. (Cf. JUSTIN, Apol. I, 32, 12 combining Num. 24: 17 and Is. 11: 1, 10.)
⁸ Cf. H. SCHLIER, ἀνατολή, in THWICKTEL (Eng) I: 353.

274
a question of directly using Justin or Melito’s works; rather a tradition for
the use of such orchestrating of texts has already been formed.

Amphilochius definitely is associating all of these texts with the Child
who is born of the Virgin. He also calls him the heavenly man, perhaps
implicitly referring to another Messianic text, Daniel 7: 13: τοῦ οὐδαμοῦ ὡς νῦν ἁν
αὐθρόπου (like a son of man from the heaven[s]) while Christ as fulfillment
is in reality for Amphilochius ὁ ἀνθρώπος ὁ οὐδαμός (the heavenly man).1

The Qumran texts have a reference to Numbers 24: 17; it is considered
Messianic.2 Simon’s coins after the revolt of 132 carry a star.3 The rabbinic
literature witnesses to a Messianic understanding of Numbers 24: 17.4
Akiba took Numbers 24: 17 in such a way as to see a fulfillment of the
prophecy in Ben Koseba.5 Unlike the rabbinic texts adduced, the Christian
usage in the Fathers clearly affirms the soteriological role of the Christ.6
The Messianic context is thus attested in Judaism, in the Qumran
community, in rabbinic literature and especially in the Septuagint itself7 —a
product of Alexandrian-Diaspora-Judaism, and a translation which became
the Church’s book.8

2. Basil the Great († 379)

Isaiah 7: 14: in the homily on Christ’s Birth.9

Basil uses the text of Isaiah 7: 14 as it is found in the Septuagint; how-
ever, he follows the Vaticanus reading of λήψεται for ἔξω.10 He uses the

1 Or. I. In Natalitia Domini: 3, I. 88.
3 W. Förster, ἀστήρ, in ThWKittel (Eng) I: 505 and n. 19. (Cf. A. S. Van der
Woude, χαλω, in ThWKittel [Eng] IX: 523, n. 189.)
4 Cf. G. Kittel, ἐρμος, in ThWKittel (Eng) II: 659, citing: Tanchuma הַמֵּת
7b: “(The Messiah) drives them forth, and brings them into the wilderness....” and Leqach
6 C. Colpe, ὁ νῦν ἁν αὐθρόπου, in ThWKittel (Eng) VIII: 410, n. 67. (I am refer-
ing to Christ, not to a second Adam theme.)
7 A. van der Woude, χαλω, in ThWKittel (Eng) IX: 510.
8 Rahlfs, I: xxiii.
9 L. Gambero studies the Basilian authenticity and the Marian doctrine of this text
in his thesis appearing in this same issue of Marian Library Studies: L’omelia sulla genera-
zione di Cristo di Basilio di Cesarea. Il posto della Vergine Maria, MLS 13-14 (1981-
1982), see pp. 107-114.
10 Homilia in Sanctam Christi Generationem, PG 31: 1464C; then, as cited from Mat-
text in combination with Baruch 3: 38 (that is, implicitly). He refutes the arguments of those who would read νέανις (young woman) in place of παρθένος (virgin) by adhering strictly to the Septuagint. It would be absurd that God would promise an extraordinary sign and not fulfill it. He argues that reading “young woman” would not be a special sign. In fact, the sign given by the Lord is unheard of, prodigious, and far removed from the ordinary. There is a reliance on the tradition of Ignatius of Antioch and possibly of Origen in which Basil stresses the fact that the virginity of Mary was hidden from the prince of this world.

3. Gregory of Nyssa († 394)

Isaiah 7: 14 and Baruch 3: 38:

Gregory of Nyssa uses the Emmanuel text in his homily on the Birthday of Christ. It is within the immediate context of answering how “a child is born for us and a son is given to us.” (Isaiah 9: 6) He uses the text, “Behold the virgin shall conceive in her womb and will bring forth a son, and they shall name him Emmanuel, which is interpreted, God-with-us.” The citation is through Matthew 1: 23. Just as Basil, he substitutes λήφηται for ἐξει. Then comes his clear statement concerning Mary: “The virgin becomes a mother, and remains a virgin.”

4. Gregory of Nazianzus († ca. 390)

Baruch 3: 36-38

This text is used in Oratio XXX of Gregory of Nazianzus. Though often used in their Nativity homilies, the Fathers were well aware that the monar-
chians had used this text in confounding the Father and Son. It is within this same historical context that Gregory makes use of the scriptural reference.

ANTIOCHENES

5. John Chrysostom († 407)

1. The Orchestration of Texts

John Chrysostom’s technique, the “orchestration of texts,” is based on using Scripture to prove or interpret Scripture. It basically comprises a choice of texts around a principal text—in the present study this usually is Isaiah 7: 14 or Baruch 3: 38—which helps to confirm, expand, or clarify the interpretation Chrysostom has given. The important texts noticed around Isaiah 7: 14 are the following ones:

Baruch 3: 38: “Since then she (He) has appeared on earth, and moved among men.”

Micah 5: 2: “But you, Bethlehem-Ephrathah, too small to be among the clans of Judah, from you shall come forth for me one who is to be ruler in Israel; whose origin is from old, from ancient times.”

Romans 6: 9-10: “We know that Christ, once raised from the dead, will never die again; death has no more power over him. His death was death to sin, once for all; his life is life for God.”

Romans 9: 5: “... theirs were the patriarchs, and from them came the Messiah (I speak of his human origin). Blessed forever be God who is over all! Amen.”

Genesis 49: 9-10: “Judah, like a lion’s whelp, you have grown up on prey, my son. He crouches like a lion recumbent, the king of beasts—who would dare rouse him? The scepter shall never depart from Judah,

1 M. Simonetti, La Crisi Ariana nel IV Secolo, p. 8, esp. n. 18.
2 Oratio XXX — Theologica IV, PG 36: 121B.
5 In Isaiam 7, PG 56: 86C; Ecloga 34, PG 63: 829C.
6 De Incomprehensibili Dei Natura, PG 48: 739A.
7 In Illud, Pater, PG 51: 37B.
or the mace from between his legs, while tribute is brought to him, and he receives the people’s homage.”

Isaiah 9: 6:1 “His dominion is vast and forever peaceful, from David’s throne and over his kingdom which he confirms and sustains by judgment and justice both now and forever.”

A similar constellation of texts is used to demonstrate the reality of the human nature of Jesus Christ: Galatians 4: 4, Philippians 2: 7, John 1: 14 and Romans 9: 5. These have already been cited.

In De Incomprehensibili Dei Natura, V, are found: Isaiah 7: 14 (Matthew 1: 23), Isaiah 9: 6, Romans 9: 5, Ephesians 5: 5, and II Timothy 1: 10. All these texts fit very well the mystery of the Nativity and the Incarnation.

In his homily on the birth of Christ, Ecloga XXXIV—the following Incarnational texts are presented: Philippians 2: 5-9, Baruch 3: 38, Isaiah 7: 14, John 1: 1, Matthew 2: 1, Matthew 1: 18-25, Isaiah 7: 10-16 and Romans 6: 9.3

In Illud, Pater, Si Possibile Est, Transeat: the value of the text is from its making use of a series of scriptural quotations to bring out a point. Since certain patterns appear, we call it an orchestration of texts or a constellation of favored texts used for the Incarnation.

Here Chrysostom goes to the beginnings of salvation history, starting with a patriarch: “From the prey, my son, you have gone up; you have stooped down as a lion”—thus Jacob blesses Judah. Then Isaiah, a prophet, announces that a Virgin shall conceive and bear a son; and, again in Isaiah 53: 2, we see him as an infant and like a root out of dry ground. Isaiah 9: 6 is then cited, followed by Isaiah 11: 1, and finally Baruch 3: 36-38. The Virgin birth and the Incarnation are asserted. David, too, in Psalm 72: 6 says: “May he be like rain that falls on mown grass, like showers that water the earth”; this is seen in reference to Mary as virgin: “so quietly and without noise he entered the virginal womb” (δι’ ἀνυφόρητα καὶ ἀταράκης εἰς τὴν μήτραν έσελήλυθε τὴν παρθενικήν) and also stressing the Davidic lineage.4

1 De Incomprehensibili Dei Natura, PG 48: 738D; In Psalm. 44, PG 55: 195CD.
2 De Incomprehensibili Dei Natura, PG 48: 738D-739A.
3 Ecloga 34, PG 63: 827-829.
4 In Illud, Pater, PG 51: 37BC.
2. Mary, the Virgin Mother of Jesus, within the context of fulfillment (Isaiah 7: 14)

The Virgin Mother of Jesus is primarily seen in texts which are of the prophecy-fulfillment theme. She is the Virgin prophesied in Isaiah 7: 14; she is the human link with the royal lineage of David (Joseph her husband also is seen in this respect.), and she is the Mother who gave Jesus human flesh while remaining a virgin. For Chrysostom Mary is the human instrument by means of which God accomplishes the Incarnation, that is, Jesus takes flesh of her in order to enter into human history and bring about salvation. Thus, her role is also bound up with the purpose of the Incarnation which primarily is soteriological. Mary cannot be compared to Christ. He, as has been pointed out, is the center of the Scriptures for Chrysostom. Mary is always secondary in relationship to Christ; she is present in the Scriptures because of Christ. Chrysostom sees the instrumental role of Mary within the Scriptures as a physical virgin who as a person within history gives the reality of human nature and the Davidic lineage to Jesus her Son.

The text of Isaiah 7: 14 is used sixteen times in an explicit citation. Not only does the text appear in the expected Matthew commentary, where it is used as a direct explicit fulfillment text (Matthew 1: 23), but it is also cited within his commentary on the Prologue of St. John, and in ten other authentic works of Chrysostom. Mary in all these texts is seen in relationship to the event of the Incarnation, specifically as the virgin (not symbolic) who was to fulfill the role of Mother to the Messiah. That is, for Chrysostom, Mary is a physical virgin born in history who gives birth to a Son for the salvation of mankind.

Why was this text so important for the Fathers and for John Chrysostom? The answer cannot be given categorically. It is evident that Chryso-

---

1. In Matt. Hom. 5, PG 57: 56D, 57A.
2. In Joh. Hom. 13, PG 59: 87B.
3. A. In Isaiam 7, PG 56: 78-86 (esp. 82B).
   C. In Psalm. 44, PG 55: 195C.
   D. In Psalm. 47, PG 55: 216A.
   E. In Psalm. 117, PG 55: 335D.
   F. De Incomprehensibili Dei Natura, PG 48: 738C-D.
   G. Contra Judaeos et Gentiles, PG 48: 815A.
   H. In Illud, Pater, PG 51: 37C.
   I. In Diem Servatoris, PG 56: 389B-390C.

Chrysostom was interested in showing the reality of Jesus' human nature by demonstrating both that the Virgin and her husband Joseph belonged to the royal lineage of David. This historical fact is important because the Messianic promises are directly related to the Davidic descendants. The text of Isaiah 7:14 is used often in a context which includes the notion of Davidic line.¹

The starting point for Chrysostom for discussing the Davidic lineage of Jesus is in his commentary on the genealogy of Matthew 1:1-17. Chrysostom clearly states that Joseph is not the father of Jesus. He is present to offer Jesus the claim to royal Davidic lineage, but, not exclusively, for Chrysostom argues from his own punctuation of the text—citing the parallel from Luke's Gospel—that Mary, too, is of the same House of David (Luke 1:27).² He is, at first, restricted by the text of Matthew for, definitely, the genealogy of the Virgin is not traced.³ Chrysostom gives the reason why Mary's genealogy is not traced—"It was not the law to do so among the Jews"—and, at the same time, he confirms the purpose and importance of Joseph's lineage from David.⁴ In searching for further support to his understanding of Mary also being from the lineage of David, Chrysostom states that marriage was supposed to be within the same tribe. He thereby returns to the Genesis 49:10 promise made to the tribe of Judah (a reference which we have seen used by the earlier Fathers).⁵

The mystery of Mary becomes more evident as the prophecy of Isaiah 7:14 is fulfilled. This key text for Chrysostom helps us to understand Mary's place in the Incarnation. He brings out the fulfillment prophecy in his Matthean commentary which speaks in general about the text of Isaiah 7:14.⁶

The title of Christ, "Son of David,"⁷ becomes important for both Matthew and Chrysostom's interpretation of Matthew. The title differs from the Fourth Gospel's title of "Word," assuring the reality of Jesus according to the flesh, which means His birth from the Virgin Mary. The thought of Chrysos-

² In Matt. Hom. 2, PG 57:27D.
³ In Matt. Hom. 1, PG 57:21B.
⁴ In Matt. Hom. 2, PG 57:28CD.
⁵ In Matt. Hom. 2, PG 57:28A.
⁶ In Matt. Hom. 5, PG 57:56D.
⁷ In Matt. Hom. 2, PG 57:27B.
Nativity Homilies

tom is definitely biblical when it comes to speaking of the origin of Jesus Christ from the Virgin Mary. He proves for his listeners that Mary is from the lineage of David—so Christ fulfills truly all that springs from biblical prophecy about David's future progeny. It is also another way of claiming for Christ the totality of his human nature from the Virgin Mary—really, according to the flesh; not as from Joseph her spouse, which is according to the Law but not the flesh. There is a pronounced fundamental realism in Chrysostom on this point which issues from the biblical pericope of Matthew 1: 18-25. Insistence on Davidic lineage is an important emphasis in the exegesis of the Fathers and, especially, in Chrysostom. Jesus is a part of the human history of God's People, the Jews, and the linear aspect of the Judaeo-Christian tradition is never forgotten. The Bible of the Church and Synagogue considers the history of mankind as essential to its message. Chrysostom was born into such a heritage.

There are texts in Chrysostom which indicate the lineage of Jesus from the House of David, then, far more remotely, from Jacob through Juda. We have seen examples of this in his commentary on Matthew. The other references are of the fulfillment type, that is, prophecy and promise are carried out by God through the birth of Jesus by Mary.1 At times, Chrysostom defends the belief in a manner similar to the rabbis who had used their commentaries as a way of protecting the Torah by building a hedge around it;2 Chrysostom uses an expression similar to this rabbinic one: "Oppose him from the witness of the Scriptures—as a wall."3 The apophatic approach continues to be used by Chrysostom.4

In the homily on the Nativity, In Diem Natalem,5 Chrysostom affirms Mary to be of the House of David (Cf. Luke 1: 26-27.). We have seen this same argument above in the Matthew commentary. Just as the star led the wise men to Christ, Mary is led to Bethlehem by the law as the prophets had predicted. She, therefore, is from the family of David; for, if she was from Bethlehem she belongs to the family of David (Luke 2: 4). Chrysostom, true to his Antiochene background, proceeds from grammar to defend his

---

1 *De Prophetiarum Obscuritate*, PG 56: 166D-167A; *De Melchisedeck*, PG 56: 259D-260A.
3 *De Melchisedeck*, PG 56: 259D.
4 Ibid.
5 *In Diem Natalem*, PG 49: 354CD.
interpretation of Luke 1: 26-27. The other parallels to such passages proceed along the same line of prophecy-fulfillment.¹

3. *The Septuagint*

The Septuagint version of Isaiah 7: 14 and its correspondent in Matthew 1: 23 is a basic text for Chrysostom’s reflections on the role of the Virgin in the Incarnation. Chrysostom uses λήψεται in place of ἔξει in the LXX; he also has the third person plural καλέσονται in place of καλέσεις. He has conflated the texts of Matthew 1: 23 and Isaiah 7: 14.

As we have seen above, there are sixteen different citations of the text (considered in the context of scriptural interpretation) within his works. His commentary on the text of Isaiah is the basis for his other citations, and can be considered to be the matrix.² Chrysostom’s later homily on the Nativity³ copies almost verbatim the ideas found in the Isaiah commentary; the same pattern is found in the fifth homily on the Gospel of St. Matthew⁴ wherein the Isaiah text is found.

Virgin is the preferred title of Chrysostom for Mary. (His argumentation differs from that offered by McHugh.)⁵ For Chrysostom, the virginity of Mary is physical, not symbolic. For him, the Septuagint version of Isaiah 7: 14 prophesied her virginity and the fulfillment of it is reached in the birth of Jesus—Matthew 1: 23 being the fulfillment text. Baruch 3: 38 is the prophetic Incarnation text which often accompanies the Isaiah text.

For him, it is not merely a sign but also a prophecy, connected to the sign within these texts.⁶ In his commentary on Isaiah, the Isaiah 7: 14 text is seen within the larger context of the chapter, strengthening Chrysostom’s interpretation. In this instance, he uses the prophetic sign as a lesson in how God as a Divine Pedagogue leads us to believe.⁷ By using the plural of Matthew 1: 23 (καλέσονται) universal salvation is meant, in contrast to its simply being a sign for Ahaz (καλέσεις).

² *In Isaiah*, PG 56: 78-86.
³ *Ecloga 34*, PG 63: 827-829.
⁵ J. McHugh, *op. cit.*, pp. 310-311. (Cf. also pp. 281-283.)
⁶ *In Isaiah*, PG 56: 83.
⁷ Ibid., PG 56: 82.
Chrysostom also uses the definite article before the word παρθένος. That the woman is a virgin is essential to his interpretation; it cannot be otherwise. Undoubtedly, he is following the fulfillment text of Matthew 1:23 to render this understanding.

In his citations, the virginity of Mary, the humanity of Jesus, and his Davidic origins are essential for Chrysostom.\(^1\) The texts of Isaiah 7:14 and Baruch 3:38 are important to his interpretation of the Incarnation.

4. Baruch 3: 38: Μετὰ τοῦτο ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς ὡφθη καὶ ἐν τοῖς ἀνθρώποις συναιστεράθη. (Since then she has appeared on earth, and moved among men.)

Chrysostom uses the text of Baruch 3:38 at least eleven times explicitly.\(^2\) The prophetic announcement of the Incarnation is his consistent interpretation for this text. Normally, he uses it with a constellation of texts for the Incarnation, especially with Isaiah 7:14 and Isaiah 9:6.\(^3\) The text is both attributed to Jeremiah\(^4\) and to Baruch.\(^5\) It seems that Hippolytus\(^6\) is the earliest of the writers to use this text. Origen had also used the text.\(^7\)

Frequently the use of the text is doctrinal, having reference to the divine and human natures within Christ. The richest insight into the text

---

\(^1\) *In Psalm. 49*, PG 55:21B.

\(^2\) John Chrysostom:
  a. *De Incomprehensi Dei Natura*, PG 48:738-739D, 740A.
  d. *De Sancta Pentecoste I*, PG 50:454B.
  e. *In S. Phocam Martyrem*, PG 50:705B.
  f. *In Illud, Pater, Si Possibile Est, Transeat*, PG 51:37C.
  g. *In Psalm. 47*, PG 55:216A.
  h. *In Psalm. 49*, PG 55:246A.
  i. *Ecolga 34*, PG 63:823D.
  j. *In Diem Natalem Christi*, PG 49:351A.
  k. *In Illud. In Qua Poteate*, PG 56:424D.

\(^3\) *De Incomprehensi Dei Natura*, V (Isa. 7:14; Matt. 1:23; Isa. 9:6; Rom. 9:5; Ephes. 5:5; and II Tim. 1:10), PG 48:738-739.

\(^4\) *Contra Judaeos et Gentiles, Quod Christus Sit Deus*, PG 48:815.

\(^5\) Ibid., PG 48:824.


\(^7\) ORIGEN, *In Matt.*, Origenes Werkes X (GCS), 562, 2. *In Joan*, VI, 6: PG 14:253A; cf. *In Joan.*, Origenes Werkes IV (GCS), XXX:15, 156. *Comment. in Epist. ad Rom.* IV, 11: PG 14:1000.
is found in St. Athanasius who seems to bring out both the relationship which Wisdom has with the Word of God, and, likewise, the relationship of other Scriptural texts to Baruch 3: 38. His interpretation contains in its seed-form the notions developed by the later Fathers of the Church. It offers as well an interpretation which springs from the original setting of the text in its Wisdom background. What is most interesting is that he uses the same constellation of texts to be found in Chrysostom (Isaiah 7: 14, Isaiah 9: 6). In a doctrinal summary Athanasius concludes, “The one is God who is born of a virgin and who became man of Mary the mother of God.”

Athanasius also has commented on Proverbs 8: 25-27 showing that the Son of God is true Wisdom, not created as things in the world, for “before the mountains, before the earth and the waters, before the hills he begot me.” The text is parallel in thought to what Athanasius has said about the meaning of Baruch 3: 38, that is, both texts serve to explain the mystery of the Word as Wisdom become flesh among men.

Gregory of Nazianzus also used Baruch 3: 36-38 to interpret the meaning of John 17: 3: “And this is eternal life, that they know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent.” This was the same text Athanasius had used. He understands the text as distinguishing the Father and the Son. In this latter notion, Gregory is close to the use of Hippolytus. It seems that the Fathers of the fourth century were dependent on Athanasius and possibly on Hippolytus for their use of the text in Incarnational thought.

**JERUSALEMITES**

*Their use of Isaiah 7: 14*

Since the text of Isaiah 7: 14 is the most important text in those homilies and tracts which treat directly of the birth of Christ, Hesychius and Cyril of Jerusalem have been chosen for the general orientation given to that text. Both preachers are from the geographical area in which the original inspiration of Isaiah 7: 14 came, albeit the translation of the Septuagint, of which they made use, is from Alexandria; therefore, the all-important word παρθένος is their preferred title for Mary, the Mother of Jesus.

1 *De Incarnatione et Contra Arianos*, PG 26: 1024-1025.
2 *Oratio II. Contra Arianos*, PG 26: 315-316.
3 *Oratio XXX—Theologica IV*, PG 36: 121B.
The text has been discussed at length throughout the pages of this thesis. The present presentation is meant as an aid to studying the citation as it appears in the context of each of the works of the Jerusalemite Fathers studied.

6. Cyril of Jerusalem († 387)

1. *Isaiah 7: 14 and Baruch 3: 38*

In his eleventh Catechetical lecture, Cyril uses the notion of Emmanuel (God with us) as a transition to his use of Baruch 3: 36-38, thus combining the two favored texts used by the Fathers for the Incarnation. He is using the texts as a testimony to Christ's divinity and humanity.

His twelfth lecture links the notion of Solomon's building the temple—“Can it indeed be that God dwells among men on earth?”—with the birth of Christ. Since the words from III Kings 8: 27 (Sept.) are remarkably close to Baruch 3: 38, it may be that Cyril understands how a relationship with the transcendent dwelling place of God, by a loving condescension of God, becomes possible through the humanity of Christ. The text concerning the temple reads in the Septuagint:

```
8-ct ei a\j.r\jw~ ua-cotu'l}aet o pe-ca &veew:runP
85 cfj~ yfj~
```

("Can it indeed be that God dwells among men on earth?"). It is a question. David's prayer implies that such a presence is possible by God's graciousness. For Cyril, the Baruch 3: 38 text is the answer:

```
&veewnot~ avPea-ceaqJ'YJ
```

("Since then he has appeared on earth and moved among men.").

Often the Fathers used Isaiah 7: 14 against unbelievers in a polemic manner. By addressing possible or imagined unbelievers, they enhanced the instructional element in their homilies and lectures. For us today, these passages offer insights into their interpretation. A good example is found in *Catechesis XII, De Christo Incarnato*. This is the same instruction that began with a direct quotation of Isaiah 7:14, which apparently was followed by a hymn to the Virgin-born God (possibly a hymn based on John's Prologue); Cyril's introductory remarks are filled with references to that hymn. In section two, the Isaiah citation is given an interpreta-

---

1 *Catech. Or. XI, De Filio Dei Unigenito*, PG 33: 708C.
4 *Catechesis XII, De Christo Incarnato*, PG 33: 725A, preliminary inscription.
tion within the context of a polemic questioning of the unbeliever (imagined or real): “Is he who is to come, for whom you are looking, to be born of a Virgin or not?” He has answered the question through a question! “Truly the prophet Isaiah says that Emmanuel would be born from a virgin.”

The prophetic texts themselves affirm that he is to be born of a virgin, so does the Gospel, so does the Church.

Cyril gives the clearest expression of his belief in the fourth section of this lecture. It is an expression which is based both on the Isaiah text (7: 14) and on the most important incarnational text in the Prologue, John 1: 14, which he immediately recites after proclaiming: “Believe that He the Only-begotten Son of God—He Himself was again begotten of a Virgin.”

In the latter part of the same instruction, two more uses of the Isaiah prophecy are made by Cyril in explaining the meaning of “‘almāh.” Cyril makes a case of the fact that often the context of a young maiden (‘almāh) demands she be a virgin. He uses Deuteronomy 22: 27 and I Kings 1: 4 to demonstrate this interpretation. At any rate, no passage shows the word used for a married woman.

Finally, in adhering to the text of Isaiah 7: 14 in its historical setting, Cyril shows that it could only mean the future and not the past. One gets the impression that Cyril was able to argue not only from the Septuagint, but from the Hebrew text.

2. Davidic/Messianic texts within Cyril of Jerusalem: ‘Ex τοῦ Δαβιδ τοῖνν ἡν ἡ ἅγια Παρθένος (“Therefore the holy Virgin was from David.”)

Cyril of Jerusalem, more than the other Fathers, underlines the importance of the Davidic lineage of Jesus within the soteriological purpose of the Incarnation. In his three discourses on the Incarnation, there are fifteen references to the Davidic origins of Jesus; these can easily be associated with biblical texts which he considered Messianic.

1 Ibid., PG 33: 728B, 728C.
2 Ibid., PG 33: 728C.
3 Ibid., PG 33: 729A: Παλαισσον, δτι αὐτος ἐκεῖνος δ τοῦ Ὁσοῦ μονογενὴς Υἱος, οὗτος ἐκ Παρθένου πάλιν ἐγεννηθη.
5 Catechesis XII, De Christo Incarnato, PG 33: 757A.
First, there are texts which speak of Jesus being born according to the flesh (hence, from David) and, yet, in his divinity he is not subjected to time and is eternal with the Father. Citing Matthew 1:1, "The book of the genealogy of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham"—He is the Son of David at the end of the ages (Yiōs μὲν γὰρ Δαβίδ ἐπὶ συντελεία τῶν αἰώνων . . . ) and, according to that same human source, from David he is subjected to time, to being handled and to genealogical descent (Ἀλλά τὸ μὲν κατὰ τὸν Δαβίδ, καὶ χρόνῳ . . . καὶ γενεαλογεῖται).1

Cyril uses two messianic psalms more to speak of the twofold generation of Christ than simply of his human origins from David. In Psalms 110:2 (109) he shows the eternal sonship of the Lord and his dominion over all things.2

Psalm 2:7 and Psalm 109:3, are used in the eleventh instruction to indicate Christ's eternal generation. He also cleverly uses a phrase from Isaiah 53:8—"Who shall tell of his generation?" Cyril says: "The Son Himself says of the Father, 'The Lord said to me. Thou art my Son, today I have begotten Thee'" (Psalm 2:7). Cyril understands today (σήμερον) to be a timeless, before all ages, designation. To confirm his statement, he adds Psalm 109:3 ("From the womb, before the morning star, have I begotten Thee."); this is the locus for the strongest juxtaposition of the two psalms considered messianic in any of the works presented.3 The two Septuagintal verb forms γεγέννηκα and ἐγέννησα unite the two psalms in a grammatic manner as well as in an hermeneutical one, as Cyril has shown.

Cyril uses Micah 5:2 as a text for showing the twofold generation of Christ. He cites the entire text: "But you, Bethlehem, house of Ephratha, are not the least among Judah’s clans; from you shall come forth for me a Ruler who shall shepherd my people Israel. His origin lies in former times, in ancient days."5

---

1 Catechesis XI, De Filio Dei Unigenito, PG 33: 696C-697A. He explains: Τὸ δὲ κατὰ τὴν θεότητα, ὁδὲ χρόνῳ ὅποιαλέται ὁδὲ τόπω, ὁδὲ γενεαλογεῖται.
2 Catechesis X, De Uno Domino, PG 33: 672B.
3 Catechesis XI, 5, PG 33: 697A.
4 Ibid. Cf. PG 33: 749A where Psalm 2:7 is applied to Christ's universal rule. Davidic origins are not mentioned.
5 PG 33: 716AB. The note in Migne is worthwhile for a study of the variants and their source; cf. PG 33: 715CD, 716C.

Cyril has used a text with variants coming from St. Matthew's use of the same verse, from the Alexandrine codex of the LXX and from codex Barberinus. Cf. J. L. Mays, Micah: A Commentary, Old Testament Library (Philadelphia, Pa.: Westminster Press, 287
Secondly, since the above text also refers to the geographical origins of David and the Messiah, we will consider the texts which refer to "a city of David." The above paragraph and its notes serve as a transition to this second point.

In his twelfth catechetical instruction, Cyril returns to the verse of Micah 5: 2. This time his text is remarkably closer to the Septuagint.¹ His interpretation commences with an exact understanding, namely, the place of the promise is what is emphasized.² Since Cyril and his congregation are in Jerusalem, the references are quite descriptive, colorful, and alive. He refers to the woody area that had been there but a few years ago³ Thus, Cyril is merely confirming the prophetic promise of Micah and its fulfillment, just as Matthew’s Gospel had affirmed.⁴

In section six of his tenth discourse, the New Testament text of Luke 2: 11 is given to show the fulfillment in salvation history of what Micah had promised. Cyril says, “Christ the Lord is he who is born in a city of David.” He immediately affirms that before the Incarnation Christ is already Lord (πρὸ τῆς ἐνανθρωπήσεως ἐστι Χριστὸς Κύριος).⁵

The final reference to the city of David takes us to the same text of Luke 2: 10-11 with the great proclamation of the good news coming to the

---

¹ The Septuagint does not have the negative conjunction μὴ before διευγομένος; Cyril also has γάρ before μοι just as his other citation. He also adds the word ἔργωμενος (which is found in Matthew 2: 6). Remarkably, he has dropped the extended phrase "who shall shepherd my people Israel" which he had used in the other reference to Micah 5: 2.
² Catechesis XII, 20, PG 33: 740B: Ἑπαργελίας δὲ τῶν τόπων . . . . (Cf. J. L. MAYS, op. cit., p. 115: "The opening is similar to 4.8 in pointing out a person who is to hear a promise.")
³ Cyril refers to Psalm 131: 6 (132): "Lo, we hear of it at Ephratha: we found it in the fields of the wood."
Cyril reads: Χριστὸς ὁ κυρίος ἐστιν ὁ τεχθεὶς ἐν πάλει Δαβίδ.
Nativity Homilies

shepherds from an angel. The difference is that in this text Christ the Lord is identified as the Son of God.¹

Thirdly, Cyril shows the origins of Jesus back to Judah. He emphasizes the human origins of Jesus (ἐκ παρθένου) through Mary who is unqualifiedly affirmed to be of the family of David. Let us proceed from the references in Genesis 49: 9-10: Jesus Christ is called “Lion” indicating his kingly and steadfast, confident nature. He is the strong lion of the tribe of Judah. This assertion finds its source in Genesis 49: 9, but it is not cited directly. Interestingly, the word ἡγοῦμενος is within the text of the Septuagint. Could Matthew in 2: 6 and Cyril himself have consciously merged the text of Micah 5: 2 with Genesis 49: 10b?²

The last citation of Genesis 49: 8, 10 is found in the Catechesis XII. Cyril tells us that he is shortening the quotation from Genesis; he proceeds: “Judah, your brothers will praise you . . . . For there will not lack a ruler from Judah, nor a leader from his thigh bones, until he comes who is to be reserved—and he will not be the expectation (of the Jews) but of the Gentiles.” Cyril has extended the salvific effect to all nations, hence, the universal effect of Christ’s coming into history is borne out.³ A comparison of the two texts in Cyril may result in discovering the versions he was using. This is beyond my scope.

The final part of this excursus consists of the references Cyril has to the Davidic lineage of Mary. In his twelfth catechesis on the Incarnate Christ, Cyril states Christ is born of a virgin. The context of the entire section 23 is within the descent from David. He uses texts from the Old Testament and applies them to Christ; he explicitly denies they are said of Solomon. The gathering of such Davidic references is excellent, and the overall Christian

¹ Catechesis X, 10, PG 33: 673A: κύριος τοίην ἐστὶν ὁ Υἱὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ.
² Catechesis X, 3, PG 33: 664B. New Testament texts having the notion of Genesis 49: 9-10 are Revelations 5: 5 (ὅ λέων ὁ ἐκ τῆς φυλῆς Ἰουδα, ἡ ἐξα ο Δαυιδ . . . . ) and Hebrews 7: 14 (γὰρ ἔτη εξ Ἰουδα οὐκ ἀνατάληκεν ὁ κύριος ἠμῶν, εἰς ἕν φυλήν περὶ λεγέων συνέλαβεν Μωυσῆς εξάληκταν).
³ Catechesis XII, 17A. See the excellent notes in Migne on a comparison of Cyril’s text with the LXX. I agree that the expression (οὐκ Ἰουδαῖων) is a parenthetical remark of Cyril rather than a citation from a Greek version. Such expressions are part of his polemic against the Jews.

289
fulfillment context seems to affirm the Davidic line through Mary, albeit implicitly.¹

Cyril uses texts from the Old Testament in order to prove that Mary is of the family of David. He emphatically asserts that the Scriptures (Psalm 132: 11, Psalm 89: 29, 36-38) are not said of Solomon but of Christ. Then he proceeds to apply all of the texts cited which directly apply to David as being confirmed by the words of Luke in the New Testament: “And the Lord God shall give unto Him the throne of His father David” (Luke 1: 32). Thus Mary is of the family of David. Moreover, his polemic against the Jews influences his interpretation of the texts of Isaiah; he goes so far as to say Isaiah foreknew that the Jews would be troubled by what he said: “And they shall wish they had been burnt with fire: for unto us a child is born (not unto them), unto us a Son is given” (Isaiah 9: 5).²

Psalm 132: 17 is attributed by Cyril to the Patriarch David who says of the Messiah: “I have prepared a lamp for my Anointed.” Some, Cyril tells us, interpret this as a lamp of prophecy; others say it of the flesh He assumed from the Virgin (ἐκ Παρθένου).³ Cyril applies the words of St. Paul (“We are earthen vessels that hold this treasure.”) to the flesh Jesus assumed from the Virgin Mary, leading up to his conclusion that she, too, is from the line of David.⁴

Cyril uses then both the Old Testament and the New Testament to show that Mary springs from Davidic origins. In the same thoroughly Davidic section (XXIII), Gabriel testifies clearly to Mary: “The Lord God will give to him the throne of his father David” (Luke 1: 32). Paul says, “He who was made from the seed of David according to the flesh” (Rom. 1: 3), and “Remember Jesus Christ raised from the dead, from the seed of David, according to my gospel” (II Tim. 2: 8). He ends the orchestration of such

¹ *Catechesis XII*, 23, PG 33: 756A, C.
texts with Isaiah 11: 10. "And there will be in that day, the Root of Jesse, who will rise up to rule the nations, and in him shall the nations hope." He also uses Psalm 22: 9 ("Thou art the One who took me out of the womb.") in reference to Mary, which shows the manner of Jesus' birth from the Virgin while other births are bound by natural law of marriage.

His most unique interpretation is that of Paul's dictum in Galatians 4: 4: "God sent forth his Son, made of a woman..."—which means made only of a woman, that is, from a virgin (ἐκ Παρθένου). Reversing the arguments of the opposers, Cyril adds: "for we have already demonstrated that a virgin is also called woman." The use of Galatians 4: 4 in this manner may have also been implicit within Theodore of Mopsuestia. If this assumption is valid, then there must have been a tradition upon which both exegetes were depending.

Cyril also used the oft-cited Messianic text of Isaiah 9: 5: "... for unto us a child is born [not unto them], unto us a Son is given." There are several things to be said about his use of the text; he, like the Cappadocian Amphilochius, uses it for the eternal generation of the Son of God as well as for his birth in time—for "Mark thou that at first He was the Son of God, then was given to us." Secondly, in showing that the ἡμίν refers to the Christians and not, as he explicitly says, "οὐ γὰρ ἀντοίχος," he may be applying the theme of remnant to the Christian Church, setting it as the New Israel. The Jews had taken the 755 as referring to themselves as the "remnant." The argumentation has the familiar ring of Justin Martyr who claimed the Old Testament for the Christians as their Scriptures.

After such a statement, Cyril shows that the peace of the Son of God is endless since his Kingdom has no bounds. He quotes again from Isaiah

1 Catechesis XII, PG 33: 756BC.
2 Ibid., PG 33: 757A.
3 Ibid., PG 33: 765A.
5 Catechesis XII, PG 33: 756C.
6 V. Herntrich, λείπου, in THWKITTEL (Eng) IV: 205: "In Is. 1: 8, 9 Zion is the remnant which God has left. The prophet and his disciples are the remnant in Israel (8: 16-18). The distinctive interrelation of historical and eschatological events is particularly to be seen in Is. in Messianic passages in which the coming of the Messiah is directly imminent (7: 10 ff.), and indeed in process of enactment (9: 5). The prophet also says that the Messiah will be given ‘us’ (7: 10 ff., ‘Immanuel’; 9: 5 twice Ἰν. The τοίχος can only be the remnant whose presence is referred to in 8: 16-18."
Greek Patristic Exegesis (4th C.)

("... upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom to order it"), and he concludes: "The Holy Virgin, therefore, is from David."\(^1\)

7. Hesychius of Jerusalem († after 450)

Twice within his homily on Mary, the Mother of God, Hesychius makes use of the text of Isaiah 7: 14.\(^2\) In the first instance, the text is indirectly or implicitly inferred. In fact, it is seen conflated with the first text Hesychius makes use of (Luke 1: 28, 31), and, felicitously so, for it gives us an insight into his understanding and interpretation of the text. Here is a comparison of the two texts:

1. Ιδοὺ γὰρ συνάληψῃ ἐν γυναικείᾳ τέκνῳ, καὶ καλέσεις τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ Ἑμμανουήλ. ("Behold, she shall conceive in her womb and bring forth a son and you will call his name Emmanuel.")

(Hesychius, Homélie VI: 1: 9-11, p. 194)

2. Ιδοὺ ἡ παρθένος ἐν γυναικείᾳ ἔσται τέκνῳ, καὶ καλέσουσι τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ Ἑμμανουήλ. ("Behold the Virgin will conceive in her womb and bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel.")

(Hesychius, Homélie VI: 7: 6-8, p. 202)

The only difference in the Septuagint for the verse is καλέσεις\(^3\) for καλέσουσι in Hesychius’ second text.

The difference in the first text is significant. Hesychius has introduced this verse by means of the angelic salutation (Luke 1: 28bc); he is using the text of Luke rather closely,\(^4\) but changes the name of Jesus to Emmanuel (I) thereby indicating his understanding of Isaiah 7: 14 behind what he has to say about this verse, as well as giving us the primary notion he is attaching to this festal celebration of Mary.\(^5\)

1 Catechesis XII, PG 33: 756C, 757A: Ἐκ τοῦ Δαβίδ τούτων ἤν ἡ ἀγία παρθένος.
3 RAHLFS, II: 579.
4 HESYCHIUS, Homélie VI: 1: 9-11, except he omits in Luke 1: 31 καὶ and reads συνάληψῃ in place of συναλλήψῃ; and, of course, substitutes or conflates from Isaiah 7: 14 (Cf. Mt. 1: 23.) Ἑμμανουήλ.
5 Ibid., VI: 1:5-6: παρθένου γὰρ περὶ ἑκεῖ πανήγυριν (p. 194). "Ce n’est pas encore une fête de l’Annunciation, mais on en devine l’amorce. Ce n’est pour lors qu’une fête de l’Incarna-
Such a use is a felicitously free one which enables us to speculate that both Matthew and Luke themselves had to be thinking of the same Emmanuel text (Luke 1: 31, Matthew 1: 23). Their mode of transmitting the text to the faithful was respectively, through the dialogue of the messenger Gabriel with Mary, hence the second person singular; and, in Matthew the word of the Lord was accomplished through his prophet Isaiah, hence the third person singular. Interestingly enough, both evangelists have retained this pattern in the Sermon on the Plain (Luke 6: 20ff.) and the sermon on the Mount (Matthew 5: 3 ff.).

The immediate context of the use of the Isaiah text is the celebration that the Virgin has been received by God’s Word (hence John 1: 14), and has through the message of Gabriel overcome the sadness and misery caused by the first virgin (Eve). Hesychius shows both the eternal generation of the Word as well as the birth of Jesus Christ in the history of mankind. Through his birth it has become a salvation history.

The second time Hesychius uses the text is within a context of challenging the unbeliever to look at an array of prophetic texts which are now fulfilled in the Incarnation. Isaiah 7: 14 forms a part of the orchestrated texts so often used by the preachers of this time. Its present location is just prior to the Baruch 3: 38 text which Hesychius attributes to Jeremiah. Then other Messianic title texts are added in the most dense use of texts within this homily.

The Emmanuel title is only found in Matthew 1: 23 where it is interpreted as God with us. In the Old Testament, Isaiah 7: 14 is the primary source for the title. There may be an implicit reflection on the title in Acts 10: 38 where we find the expression (δ Θεός Υδρ μετ’ αidores [Jesus]) “God was with Him.”

Again the importance of naming is evident in the text. The idea
of naming is particularly clear when the accusative of object is linked with 
a predicative accusative as in the verses we are considering—Matthew 
1: 21, 23 (Is. 7: 14), Matthew 1: 25, Luke 1: 13, 31.¹ We have already 
noted how certain names bring salvific effect: Emmanuel is among them. 

In speaking of the term παρθένος for 'almāh in the Hebrew, the 
Fathers usually enter into a polemic against the unbelievers. Chrysostom 
uses examples from the Bible where the term can mean, in his opinion, an 
unmarried woman who is a virgin. The term 'almāh appears nine times 
within the Bible, and in Genesis 24: 43, Exodus 2: 8, Psalm 68: 25, 
and I Chronicles 15: 20 it can mean an unmarried woman. The em-
phasis in the texts may be on the physical maturity and marriageable age 
of the woman rather than on her virginity. Even so, the term 'almāh is not 
normally used for the mother of a son who has long since been able to walk—
that is, if one interprets the son of Isaiah to be the promised "Emmanuel." 
Some scholars state that the notion of parthenogenesis would require the term 
ḇēthulāh rather than 'almāh.² 

The Fathers, however, coming from the tradition of an Ignatius of 
Antioch and Justin Martyr are not wont to succumb to lexical arguments 
against the virginity of the mother of the Messiah. In fact, they have their 
own lexical proof texts for this verse, as we have seen in Chrysostom.³ Here 
the living tradition of the texts is what is important; for those who are con-
sidered orthodox, the text does mean virginity which is physical and not 
only symbolic. 

There are also scholars who have spoken clearly of interpreting the text 
as the Fathers have done, that is, as implying the virginal conception of 
Mary in Matthew 1: 23.⁴

¹ K. L. SCHMIDT, καλέω, in ThWKITTEL (Eng) III: 487. 
² G. DELLING, παρθένος, in ThWKITTEL (Eng) V: 832. 
³ Ibid., p. 833: “This review ... makes it plain that on purely lexical grounds it is 
impossible to say whether the translator is expressing true virginity when he uses παρ-
θένος at Is. 7: 14. The total picture of LXX usage demands no more than the sense of a 
“woman untouched by a man up to the moment of the conception (of Immanuel).” 
⁴ Ibid., p. 836, esp. n. 66: “Lagrange, 70. Mt and Lk. obviously derived their account of 
the virgin conception of Jesus from Palestinian Christianity. It has been noted again 
and again that the infancy story in Lk. goes back to Jewish Christian tradition in style 
and structure, ...” (Lagrange 70 refers to M.-J. LAGRANGE, “La conception surnaturelle 
du Christ d’après saint Luc,” RB 11 [1914] 60-71, p. 70.) 
Cf. E. SCHWEIZER, πνεύμα (D-F), in ThWKITTEL (Eng) VI: 402.
Nativity Homilies

PART II. HESYCHIUS: STUDY OF TEXTS WITHIN Hypapante II

Introduction:

This second part of the study centers on Hesychius and texts from the infancy narrative of St. Luke which are used to explain the role of Mary within the Incarnation. These same texts give us a resource for studying the methodology of Hesychius.

Thanks to the critical edition of the festal homilies of Hesychius by Father M. Aubineau, we can analyze two of the four Marian discourses to know the use of the Sacred Scriptures by Hesychius in his preaching about the mysteries of Mary and of the Incarnation. Father Aubineau in his introduction to the first homily of Hesychius on the feast of "Hypapante" stresses the fact that:

Hesychius draws his knowledge from the Bible: he commented on Leviticus and the Psalter, and has glossed Isaiah. True, the rules for the homiletic genre differ from those of a learned commentary destined only to be read. Nevertheless, we find again, in Hesychius the preacher the same scrupulous fidelity to Scripture, and "mutatis mutandis" some of his procedures as commentator.¹

Aubineau briefly indicates some characteristics of this use of the Bible in the example of the first homily for the feast of Hypapante.² In particular, Aubineau points to Hesychius' faithfulness to follow the progression of the biblical text itself, the commenting upon the Bible through the Bible (both Old and New Testaments), and the use of frequent rhetorical questions inspired by the biblical text itself. We have also drawn our own conclusions about this method and its characteristics, as shown in the second homily on the Hypapante³ and the important VIth discourse praising Mary, the Mother of God⁴—both dated before the Council at Ephesus (431).

A. Introductory Remarks on Homily II, De Hypapante

Luke 2: 22-38: The Presentation of the Lord

Hesychius is among the earliest witnesses to the fact that homilies were delivered on the feast of Hypapante. The recent critical edition by Aubineau

² Ibid., pp. 7-11.
³ Ibid., pp. 61-75.
⁴ Ibid., pp. 194-205.
helps to determine this through the documentation. Father Aubineau indi-
cates that the feast was considered very important and was celebrated in
Jerusalem on February 14 (forty days after the Epiphany, January 6).

The second homily of Hesychius is a good example of the evolution
between the composition of Luke, who stressed the importance of Jerusalem
and the event of Jesus' Presentation in the Temple, and the explanation of
this text and this event as a mystery of salvation by Hesychius in Jerusalem,
around 400-420 A.D.

Hesychius, right from the beginning, quotes the texts indicating the
action of the Holy Spirit in this pericope (Luke 2: 25-38). This second homi-
ly—starting at verse 25, the episode of Simeon—begins with a comment
about the Holy Spirit, and stresses this Spirit throughout the entire homily
by means of a rhetorical question: "Do you not know that the Holy Spir-it . . . ?" The argumentation then follows with the given biblical facts,
that: (1) The Spirit has established Simeon as a prophet. (2) Simeon is
addressed with divine advice (Χρηματισμός), corresponding to the verb in
Luke 2: 26 (κεχρηματισμένον), that he should not see death until he had
seen the Christ (Cf. Luke 2: 26); at once, Hesychius adds the text of the
promise fulfilled: "Now, Master, you can dismiss your servant according to
your word in peace" (Luke 2: 29). (3) The Spirit guides Simeon in the bles-
sing of Joseph and Mary (Luke 2: 34). (4) It is the Spirit who orders Simeon
to announce to Mary: "Behold this one [the child] is established for the
fall and rise of many in Israel." (5) It is he who inspires Anna and she, too,
becomes a "prophetess" (Luke 2: 36): "Is it not because she was filled by this
[Spirit] that she announced the redemption (Luke 2: 38) through the baby
[Jesus] ?"

B. The Holy Spirit and the Mystery of Salvation

In Simeon, Hesychius shows the action of the Spirit in our salvation.
The Spirit expresses great praise of Simeon (οἱ μικρὸν ἑγκατέρμιον). Luke's
text reads: "There was a man in Jerusalem" (Luke 2: 25); Hesychius am-
plified the text saying: "A man was found in Jerusalem. The grace [of
God] found him, a man whom the Prophets and the Law [the Ancient
Covenant] awaited and desired; the prophets sought him, the law desired
him, the higher grace (Χάρις) found him and 'crowned him'; . . . he was

1 Ibid., pp. 2-6.
2 Ibid., Hom. II: 3: 2, p. 62.
just, pious, and he waited for the consolation for Israel.” (Cf. Luke 2: 25—
dative: τῷ Ἰακώβ, instead of Luke’s genitive.) We should compete with
Simeon in his dispositions; we could declare him “blessed.”

The Holy Spirit was upon him (Luke 2: 25). Hesychius explains the text,
using I Corinthians 3: 16 (Simeon is a temple, the temple of God.) and the
biblical themes of the temple of Yahweh and of the people as the bride of
God: “Simeon kept pure the bridal chamber of his flesh, it was revealed to
him that he would not die before seeing the Christ ‘the one who abolishes
death . . . the one who changes tombs into bridal chambers.’” Simeon
attracted the indwelling of the Spirit.

Simeon came to the Temple, moving in the Spirit. For Hesychius it is
evident that Simeon acted always according to the command of the Spirit
(κατὰ πρόστασιν τοῦ πνεύματος) indwelling in him. The Spirit enabled
him to recognize the Child. Hesychius explains the content of this inspira-
tion and this command with the Spirit saying: “Run, old man, run; hurry
now, grasp the blessing rapidly before the star appears, before the Magi come,
so that we may not be mocked.” Hesychius is delineating one of his prin-
ciples, namely, the plan of God. The light of the Spirit [Jesus] has to precede
the star in Bethlehem: “It must be acknowledged that through me [the
Spirit] its course was guided and received its beam. But do not be de-
prived . . . by the uncircumcised taking the first fruits of the benediction.”

this blessing is already a Trinitarian doxology: Simeon blessed God the
Father with the Son, and the Son with the Holy Spirit. Indeed the Spirit
was active; the Son was there as a baby; the Father “worked in numerous
and great mysteries.”

“My eyes have seen your salvation (Luke 2: 30) . . . the light of the
nations, and the glory of your people Israel” (Luke 2: 32). Hesychius’
comment sees a direct revelation of the divinity of the Child Jesus. Simeon
speaks to the Child: “Now, through your own experience you made the Most
High present to the human race who humbled himself for us by becoming a

---

1 Ibid., Hom. II: 3:3-10, p. 62.
2 Ibid., Hom. II: 4, p. 64.
3 Ibid., Hom. II: 5: 2-3, p. 64.
4 Ibid., Hom. II: 5: 10-11, p. 64.
5 Since it is the Jews who must first receive the Messiah.
7 Ibid., Hom. II: 6: 7, p. 66.
baby.”¹ Making use of the biblical theme of God the Father as potter, Hesychius in this same text notes beautifully that the potter did not save the clay without first being incorporated with it.

“My eyes have seen your salvation prepared for all the nations” (Luke 2: 30-31). This salvation is for all the nations because it is offered by the maker of all who exists from the beginning (φανερώτατος); the mystery of this salvation is universal. Hesychius explains Luke’s word order (first: light for the nations; second: the glory of Israel) as the Plan of Salvation in which the last (the Gentiles) become first and the first (the Jews) last,² as St. Paul also put it.

C. Prophecy of Simeon

The texts beginning with Simeon’s blessing and ending with the sword of sorrow (Luke 2: 35) are of special interest since they touch upon Mary’s role in the mystery of Christ’s Presentation in the Temple.

Since there is a similar treatment of Luke 2: 34-35 in Homily I, De Hypapante, the following structural analysis showing likenesses and differences will help in our commenting upon each one separately. The differences are shown in parentheses.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Homily II, De Hypapante³</th>
<th>Homily I, De Hypapante⁴</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>8: 1-2 (His father and mother) are astonished</td>
<td>7: 1 (Joseph) and his mother are astonished</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8: 4-8 A reflection of Mary</td>
<td>7: 3-5 (developed) reflections of Mary</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8: 12-13 (the blessing of Simeon; the parents become a benediction)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9: 1-2 (Child will cause) fall and rise of many</td>
<td>7: 5-6 Fall and rise of many</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

¹ Ibid., p. 67, n. 1: Jesus could present the Most High to mankind through his “personal experience.”
² Ibid., p. 66 (Cf. Mt. 19: 30, etc.): a prediction of Jesus (through the Evangelists) indicating the mystery of salvation which Hesychius summarizes (according to Rom. 9: 1-5, 11: 1-26): “Those who had preceded were deprived of their privileges because of their apathy.”
³ Ibid., Hom. II: 8-12, pp. 68-73.
Nativity Homilies

9: 4-15 unbelievers— (Law-believers sin, but rise)

(direct) use of 1 Peter 2: 6-8

10: 1-2 sign of contradiction = Cross

10: 9-10 lists unbelievers (only Pharisees)

10: 11 lists believers — centurion, MARY

key text: (was already presented through 1 Peter 2: 6-8)

11: 1-3 Sword = (διάκρισις)

11: 4 (Θαυμάσεις = paradox revealed by Spirit to Mary)

her pondered prodigies (contrasted with Christ hung upon Cross)

12: 2 διαλογισμοὶ — Luke 2: 35

12: 5 (ὑπομειναντῶν)

12: 8 Cleopas — (μικρὰ περὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ)

12: 12 (Mary Magdalene) — (ὁ λογισμὸς ἁπάντης) (No outward failing for Mary)

7: 8 (Christ as [key-] stone)

7: 9-15 unbelieving; believing

7: 9 (allusion) to 1 Peter 2: 6-8

8: sign of contradiction = Cross

8: 1-6 listing of unbelievers: (Jews, Synagogue, "people," priests, scribes, Pagans)

8: 7 lists believers: centurion, MARY

8: 8-10 key text: (1 Cor. 1: 23-24)

8: 11-13 Sword = (διχόνοια)

8: 14-15 her prodigies pondered

8: 17 (Ποῖοι) διαλογισμοὶ;

8: 18 (Varying, troubled thoughts about Christ during Passion)

8: 21 (ὑπομένοντες)

8: 21 Cleopas

8: 22 (disciples)

(Not only simple disciples, but the elect [Cleopas] and his Mother have passed through this shock.)

Hesychius cites Luke accurately (Luke 2:35). Through his technique of rhetorical questioning, he calms his audience into understanding Joseph is not the human father in the conception of Jesus. He has the evangelist
(Luke) not forgetting what had been said through Gabriel (Cf. Luke 1: 35.), and, in giving a further reason why Joseph is called father, Hesychius returns to the tradition begun by Ignatius of Antioch and continued by Origen, namely, that the devil would be kept uninformed about the mystery of salvation, in which Mary's virginity plays a role.¹

Immediately returning, as is his wont, to the text of Luke 2: 33, he states “they were still in amazement at what things were being said of him” (Notice that Hesychius has changed the participle θαυμάζοντες to Εθαυμα­ζον—from imperfect tense.).² Simeon then blesses them (Luke 2: 34a). Hesychius interprets this to mean that Joseph and Mary in being blessed by Simeon become a benediction for those who had been under the blow of a malediction.³ This interpretation of Hesychius is consonant with the Lukan text.⁴

Sections 9 and 10 of Hesychius' Homily II, De Hypapante, are treated under the excursus for I Peter 2: 6-8.

D. Luke 2:35: “A sword shall pierce your heart...”

Hesychius introduces the passage on the sword with a remark leading us to conclude that the interpretation he will proffer is bound up with the believers (those who rise) and unbelievers (those who will fall).⁵ Thus, the remarks made in the excursus on Luke 2: 34 are important for understanding what follows.

Hesychius’ text is again an accurate citation of Luke 2: 35. He reads the particle δε as do the majority of the Greek manuscripts with the exception of Vaticanus. Aland’s critical edition has noted this and retained the particle in the main body by means of a bracket.⁶

We will compare (pp. 310 ff.) Basil’s text with Origen’s on this verse. Our task here is simply to note the different approach of Hesychius in his

¹ Ibid., p. 69, n. 1.
² Ibid., Hom. II: 8: 11, p. 68.
³ Ibid., Hom. II: 8: 12-14, p. 68.
⁴ J. Schneider, οδηγείων, in ThWkittel (Eng) II: 761-762: “When Simeon takes the child Jesus into his arms, he can only praise God for the grace which has been given him to see the Savior (Lk. 2: 28). He himself has entered the kingdom of blessing which flows from Christ. Thus the old man can also bless the parents of the child (2: 34).”
commentary on the sword which pierces Mary’s soul. Hesychius calls the word “ἡ διάκρισις,” which Aubineau translates as a doubt.1

The word διάκρισις has the following principal meanings: a) separation, distinction, b) division, c) discernment, d) hesitation, doubt.2 (The word, however, is not found in the New Testament.)

Mary will experience the “διάκρισις” at the time of the Crucifixion. We must remember that Hesychius is understanding Simeon as prophesying about the future: “You will be astonished upon seeing him suspended on the cross.” The word ὥσπεράς may indicate a marvellous element of revelation;4 the fact that several of the prodigies accomplished in Mary immediately follow strengthens this interpretation.

There is a revelation of the inner trouble Mary experienced because of Simeon’s prediction, but, strictly speaking, there is not a negative judgment passed on her. Struggles leading her to perfection are evident, but, it seems, to a less “culpable” degree than those of Cleopas (μικρά περί τοῦ Χριστοῦ),6 and Mary Magdalene (ὁ λογισμός ἁσθενῆς ἄν). Moreover, we have the example of the centurion who has no negative pronunciation made about him in relationship to the death of Christ. At most, Mary’s failing would be slighter than that of Cleopas and Magdalene; and who would put the centurion above her?

In Luke 2: 35b the term διαλόγισμον is important. The word is found thirteen times in the New Testament and all uses are pejorative. In Luke the

---

1 HESYCHIUS (AUBINEAU, ed.), op. cit., p. 71.
2 LAMPE, pp. 375-376. Lamp’s entry has the definition “a division of opinion, discord.” The examples given treat of discord at Nicaea and other Council-like settings. From the exegetes studied, Gregory of Nazianzen uses the word in Or. 32.2 (PG 36: 176B) and Basil has it in Epist. 280 (PG 32: 965C) and in Epist. 51.2 (PG 32: 392). Apparently, Thomas Aquinas was aware of the problem with this word. A. DE GROOT, op. cit., has the following important statement: “Zwar wollte S. Thomas Basilius freisprechen, indem er unsere Stelle nicht als, dubium infidelitatis sondern als, dubium admirationis et discussionis interpretiert” (p. 14, n. 23: “Summa Theol. III, q. 27, a. 4, ad 2 . . .”).
4 G. BERTRAM, Ὄσιμα, in ThWKITTEL (Eng) III: 39: “The marvellous element in this story corresponds to OT prophecy. Jesus Himself applied the saying in Ps. 118: 22 f. to Himself in the parable of the wicked husbandmen, Mk. 12: 11, Mt. 21: 42, in keeping with its Messianic exposition in Judaism.”
5 HESYCHIUS (AUBINEAU, ed.), op. cit., Hom. II: 12: 8, p. 72.
6 Ibid., Hom. II: 12: 13, p. 72.
other five uses refer to hostile thoughts against Jesus or, at least, questioning him. The διαλογισμός of 35b would be a continuation of the sign to be contradicted in 2: 34d.\(^1\)

Hesychius' interpretation of such thoughts is crucial to understanding his concept of Mary's holiness. It is not at all certain that he passes negative judgment upon her. The conclusions are not drawn up with regard to her person. Certainly, he is far from the negative decision of Origen, which we will see in our study of Basil's letter 260. All of the words used by Hesychius touch the notion of severance within the mind or heart, doubting, wavering, or struggling within. Hesychius presents the human psychological condition in Mary's heart. In a sense, the Holy Spirit through Simeon has opened the innermost heart of Mary's thought and revealed it to future generations. If there is scandal to be taken, it would be absurd to blame Mary and the Holy Spirit.\(^2\)

In reviewing the patristic literature on these passages, R. E. Brown is critical of the interpretation because most of the Fathers interpreted Luke with non-Lucan material.\(^2\) He does not cite either Amphilochius or Hesychius. Hesychius has remained with Lucan texts throughout his homily. We have seen how he carefully moves along from verse to verse from a given pericope throughout his entire homily.\(^3\) He has also used texts to which Brown himself alludes (Cf. I Peter 2: 8, Isaiah 8: 14, Psalm 118: 22, Romans 9: 30.).\(^4\) What is expressed ambiguously in Luke is also ambiguous in Hesychius—our later doctrinal concerns about the holiness of Mary did not influence either the evangelist or Hesychius, the preacher who commented on Luke.

The Fathers and modern exegetes have carefully looked at the symbol of the sword in attempting to interpret the passage. The text reads ἄμψαλα in Luke 2: 35a.\(^5\) We may note the commentary included under ἄμψαλα

\(^1\) R. E. Brown, op. cit., p. 441.
\(^3\) Hesychius (Aubineau, ed.), op. cit., pp. 6-7: "Hésychius va régler ses développements sur la progression même du récit, du verset 22 au verset 35, gratifiant chaque membre de phrase, chaque expression notable, de brèves considérations commes dans ses commentaires, à cette différence près que les gloses seront ici un peu plus copieuses, et insérées avec habileté dans une période oratoire."
\(^4\) R. E. Brown, op. cit., p. 461.
\(^5\) W. Michaelis, ἄμψαλα, in ThWKitel(Eng) VI: 994: "The statistics[LXX] overwhelmingly support the equation ἄμψαλα = ἔπα [herev] = 'sword,' and this is the sense even where there is no Mas. [massorah]."
in the *Theological Dictionary of the New Testament*. For Brown, the most recent exegete to comment on this verse, the sword is one of discrimination. He uses Ezekiel 14: 17 as the closest Old Testament vocabulary parallel: “Let a sword pass through the land so that I may cut off man and beast.” Brown uses this text to develop his exegesis, yet dismisses Ambrose’s use of the sword as representing the word of God. Naturally, he would reject Basil’s use of Hebrews 4: 12. It is here that Hesychius has identified the sword with the διάξωσις for doubts cut through every human heart at the moment of the Crucifixion. Mary is astonished at the sight and questions how it is possible that one born in such a special manner could undergo the Crucifixion. The contrasting of calamities with prodigies is one of the characteristics of Hesychius’ description of those who believe the Word and those who stumble by not believing the Word. Those who believe see the prodigies and overcome the calamities; the reverse is true for the unbelievers. Though the notion of stumbling because they do not believe the Word is based more on I Peter 2: 6-8, the notion of the Word cutting through may be implicit (Cf. Heb. 4: 12); the immediate context does not permit the latter notion, but the overall section of the homily may allow for this implicit reference to Hebrews 4: 12.

We may conclude our observations on Hesychius’ understanding of Luke 2: 35 with the assurance that he did understand Mary as participating in the prophetic announcement of Simeon as a believer in Christ. Certainly, as Basil had noticed, the Apostles and Mary were rapidly brought to salva-

---

1 *Ibid.*, p. 995: “The saying of the aged Simeon to the mother of Jesus in Lk. 2: 34f. contains in v. 35a the parenthetical statement: καὶ σοῦ δὲ αὐτῆς τὴν ψυχὴν διελέστηκα ρομφάλα. This intimation, influenced by OT diction, . . . looks ahead to the later fate of Jesus and to the maternal sorrow which Mary will not be spared but which will not lead her astray from God’s gracious guidance.” (Cf. n. 19: “Rightly, most modern commentators are against the idea that there is any reference to Mary’s future doubts concerning Jesus’ mission.”)

2 R. E. BROWN, *op. cit.*, p. 463. (The LXX reads: Ῥωμφάλα διελθάτω διὰ τῆς γῆς.)

3 HESYCHIUS (AUBINEAU, ed.), *op. cit.*, Hom. II: 11: 3-4, p. 70: Ῥωμφάλα σοῦ τὴν ψυχὴν”, ἡ διάξωσις, . . .


5 J. McHugh, *op. cit.*, p. 109: “The meaning of Simeon’s prophecy, therefore, is that the word of revelation brought by Jesus will pass through Israel like a sword, and will compel men to reveal their secret thoughts.” (Cf. p. 108: “. . . In the New Testament, then, the sword can be a metaphor for divine revelation as an instrument of judgment, whereby God compels men to reveal their true characters.”)
tion through the Resurrection. The clouds of doubt are over. She who had no explicit failing is enumerated with Cleopas and Magdalene. Mary's innermost thoughts are revealed only through the Holy Spirit prophesying through Simeon. Her mystery is known only to the Spirit. Can we not assume that she who pondered so many of the prodigies accomplished in her and her Son was always under the power of the Spirit? Hesychius leaves us with our own conclusions.

In I, De Hypapante, Hesychius concludes his homily with his reflections on Luke 2: 33-35.¹ We have seen the comparison of its structure (that is, the section covering Luke 2: 33-35) with II, De Hypapante. In outline it is similar, but our concern was to indicate the differences (by means of parentheses). Our present task is simply to draw up the significant remarks which may help our conclusion.

Hesychius paraphrases Luke 2: 33a to read “Joseph and his Mother,” but does not comment on the statement as he does in homily II. He expands the prodigies centered in the mystery of the Incarnation: How could the Christ permit Himself to be the Son of Man, how could a woman contain God in her womb, how could Mary give birth to the liberator of the world? This more extensive description fits well the Ἐνθρόκος title which appears two times within this first homily.²

He cites Luke 2: 34b, alluding to I Peter 2: 6 and Isaiah 28: 16, applying the text simply to those who fall because of unbelief and those who rise because of their belief in Christ the stone.³ He gives examples of those who fall (Judas) and rise after having fallen (Peter). Peter sins through the words of his mouth, but rises; whereas, Judas sins in the depths of his heart.⁴

The homily rapidly draws to its conclusion, beginning with the “sign of contradiction” (Luke 2: 34c) which is the Cross. The long list of unbelievers is drawn up: Jews, the Synagogue, the people, priests, scribes and pagans.⁵ The centurion, however, openly professes his belief.

Hesychius uses a reference to I Corinthians 1: 23-24 to summarize or, better, to find a biblical parallel to what he has just said: “A scandal for the Jews and foolishness for the pagans, but for those who are called, it is Christ, the power and wisdom of God.”⁶

¹ HESYCHIUS (AUBINEAU, ed.), op. cit., pp. 38, 40, 42.
² Ibid., Hom. I: 2: 21, 8: 15 (Cf. p. 11.).
³ Ibid., Hom. I: 7: 5-11, p. 38.
⁴ Ibid., II. 15-17.
⁶ Ibid., II. 8-10.
Hesychius continues to cite the text of Luke 2:35a. The sword is a metaphor for a doubt because just as it divides and cuts a body, so, too, a doubt divides and makes the soul hesitate.\textsuperscript{1} He clearly states that though Mary was a virgin she also was a woman; though she was Θεοτόκος she also was of our frail human substance (ἐκ τοῦ ἡμετέρου φυλάματος).\textsuperscript{2} The word used by Hesychius for Mary’s doubt is διχόνοια. The word means a discord or division of opinion.\textsuperscript{3}

In concluding, Hesychius touches upon the final part of Luke 2:35—“so that the thoughts of many might be revealed.” He, as is his custom, asks, “What thoughts? The different ones about Christ at the moment of His Passion.”\textsuperscript{4} Hesychius, then, is bringing back the theme of his homily about the believers and unbelievers. The disciples with Cleopas (an elect?) bring to the audience concrete examples of doubt as they raise questions about Christ as prophet and liberator. Mary, who is greater than they, likewise undergoes the inner turmoil of disturbing thoughts about her Son at the moment of His Crucifixion. Hesychius closes his homily with the sentence: “By the Passion of the Cross indeed all have been subjected to the crucible and all were shaken, not only the ordinary disciples but even the elect and His Mother.”\textsuperscript{5}

\begin{flushleft}
\textbf{E. An Excursus on I Peter 2: 6-8}
\end{flushleft}

In his homily \textit{II, De Hypapante}, Hesychius makes use of Scripture to fulfill Scripture.\textsuperscript{6} He has remarkably combined the interpretation of Luke 2:34 with the text of I Peter 2:6-8. He has recognized the fulfillment of Isaiah 28:16 within the words of Peter who is consciously citing Isaiah the prophet. The texts are so inextricably bound together that we have one of the finest biblical interpretations possible, and, as we will see, Hesychius has seen a connection with Simeon and Mary noticed also by modern exegetes. It is one of the finest pieces of exegesis studied within these homilies. More-

\begin{itemize}
\item \textsuperscript{1} \textit{Ibid.}, II. 12-14.
\item \textsuperscript{2} \textit{Ibid.}, I. 15.
\item \textsuperscript{3} \textsc{Lampe}, p. 375 (διχόνοια).
\item \textsuperscript{4} HESYCHIUS (\textsc{Aubineau}, ed.), \textit{op. cit.}, Hom. \textit{I}: 8:17-19, p. 40.
\item \textsuperscript{6} HESYCHIUS (\textsc{Aubineau}, ed.), \textit{op. cit.}, Hom. \textit{II}: 9: 1-15, pp. 68, 70.
\end{itemize}
over, within this paragraph Hesychius gives the key to his analysis of the sword of sorrows within Luke 2: 35.

The text in Hesychius reads: “Behold I am laying a cornerstone (keystone) in Zion, chosen, honorable, and he who puts his faith in it shall not be ashamed.”¹ The latter part of the citation follows the text of Romans 9: 33 reading ὁ δὲ κατασκευάσθησεν (shall not be ashamed) rather than the LXX Isaiah 28: 16 οὗ τε κατασκευάσθη (lest he not be shamed).

As is the method of Hesychius, especially in thematic homilies, the preacher continues by citing consecutive verses of the same chosen Scriptures. Thus he continues citing the text of I Peter 2: 7-8. His second homily De Hypapante started with Luke 2: 26 and consecutively and systematically works up to Luke 2: 38. The possibly prior or earlier homily, I, De Hypapante,² starts with Luke 2: 22 and progresses to 2: 35. A comparison of the two texts was made earlier in this study; both homilies have I Peter 2: 6-8 and the “sword of sorrows” (Luke 2: 35).

The text of I Peter 2: 6-8 reads in Hesychius: “For you, then, who believe, [the stone] is precious; but for the unbelieving the stone which the builders rejected, this [stone], has become a “capstone” [keystone] and an obstacle stone and a stumbling block—for such who are stumbling are those disbelieving the Word.” He follows the text of I Peter even more closely for these two verses than for verse six; the only difference consists in his use of δῶσι in place of οὗ before προσκόπτουσιν.³

In his first homily, which contains an interpretation which identifies the stone as Christ,⁴ Hesychius alludes to I Peter 2: 6, then I Peter 2: 8.⁵ The texts are definitely related, for they are applied to the same section of Luke 2: 33-34 and are substantially the same in understanding. This text is an

¹ Ibid., II. 4-6, p. 68.
² Ibid., Hom. I: 16, 8: 18, pp. 26 and 40. AUBINEAU, who is the expert on HESYCHIUS, has presented convincing information that Homily I is probably a festival sermon for February 14: The Meeting of the Savior, and indicates it may be the earliest of such homilies—though Amphiloctius of Iconium has one that can be argued as pre-dating this of Hesychius. Aubineau states: “Voilà donc une homélie sur l’Hypapante, peut-être la plus ancienne qui ait été conservée, prononcée par le prêtre Hésychius, à Jérusalem, un 14 février, dans la première moitié du vᵉ siècle: cette homélie s’insère parfaitement dans l’ordo liturgique de la ville sainte; elle convient à une fête du Christ, manifesté tout ensemble dans son humanité et sa divinité” (ibid., p. 6).
³ Ibid., Hom. II: 9: 10, p. 68.
⁴ Ibid., Hom. I: 7: 8, p. 38.
⁵ Ibid., II. 8 and 9.
important one for Hesychius, for, as Aubineau has pointed out, there are other allusions to I Peter 2: 6 and Isaiah 28: 16 in his works—all touching upon the mystery of Hypapante. The text of Peter also alludes to Psalm 118: 22. The use of such a text with its parallels and sources makes it a perfect choice for Hesychius' theme of promise-fulfillment through Isaiah to Peter and then in the reality of Simeon's words to the Virgin. It is another example of passing from text to event (a reality or historical occasion in the eyes of an evangelist, in this case, Luke 2: 33-35).

Hesychius has definitely placed Simeon's words to Mary as the starting point for his masterful interpretation. The same phrase from Luke 2: 34 is taken up again as the sign of contradiction is explained to Mary. She and then Cleopas and Mary Magdalene become the persons involved in his explanation of the doubts and intimate thoughts to be revealed. He had used Peter and Judas in his first homily, then Mary, the Mother of Jesus, and Cleopas. Peter and Judas are left aside in the second homily.

Let us return to the biblical text of I Peter 2: 6-8 and survey the background of that text and the parallels suggested by it and by Hesychius in his homilies on the Hypapante.

Hesychius is identifying Jesus with all of the texts, but especially with that of I Peter 2: 6. He tells us explicitly in his first homily, "Αλθός ἦν δ Ἐχιστὸς εἰς οἰκοδομὴν κείμενος." The stone referred to in I Peter 2: 6 is the "final stone" in a building, probably the one set over a gate, normally called the "keystone." This word ἀκρογωνιαῖος is found only in I Peter 2: 6 and Ephesians 2: 20; in both cases it refers to Christ. ("You form a building which rises on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, with Christ Jesus himself as the capstone." Eph. 2: 20) The background for the

---

1 Ibid., p. 39, n. 1 (referring to Hom. I: 7: 8-9): "Allusion à I Pierre 2, 6 et Is. 28, 16: 'Si lapis anguli nobis non faber factus esset, dissoluta domus non potuisset exaedicari,' dans Hom. géorg. in Hyp., 7 (Garrite, p. 369)."

2 Ibid., Hom. II: 9: 1-2, p. 68.

3 Ibid., Hom. II: 10: 1-2, p. 70.

4 Ibid., p. 39, n. 3: "... Hesychius in Hom. georg. in Hyp., 8: 'Cecidit Judas et surrexit Paulus'—another example of how he has applied the "rise and fall" of Luke 2: 34 now to Judas and Paul!"
term is fascinating. Joachim Jeremias has clearly demonstrated that the term “final stone” or capstone is a better rendition than Isaiah 28: 16 (LXX) which identifies ἀκρογονιαῖος with the foundation stone.¹

Perhaps the clinching argument is that the second parallel used in I Peter 2: 7, εἰς κεφαλὴν γωνίας, is read ἐν τῷ ῥόσῳ πιννα in Psalm 118: 22—which literally means the cap of a corner or the head of a corner. In fact, Jeremias points out that Peshitta Psalm 118: 22 reads “head of the building.” In the New Testament, Psalm 118: 22 is found in Mark 12: 10 and its parallels, Acts 4: 11, and, of course, I Peter 2: 7. All texts refer to Christ chosen by God as the chief capstone in the heavenly sanctuary.²

The Christian Scriptures are using the Hebrew Scriptures as a source for these Messianic statements about Christ as rock. The rabbinic literature, likewise, attests to the Judaic tradition of these same texts used for the Messiah.³

In Christian usage, the Psalm 118: 22 translated in the Syriac has been attested to by Symmachus, Testimony of Solomon, Hippolytus, Tertullian, Aphroates, Prudentius and in Synagogue poetry: the κεφαλὴ γωνίας is the stone which crowns the building, or, more precisely, the keystone of the structure.⁴ This tradition is also attested in the Epistle of Barnabas where this falling or rising is on Christ as salvation.⁵

1 J. Jeremias, γωνία, ἀκρογονιαῖος (κεφαλὴ γωνίας), in ThWKittel (Eng) I: 792.
2 Ibid., p. 793: “I Peter 2: 7 interprets Ps. 118: 22 in terms of the σκάνδαλον which Jesus is for unbelievers. In other words, the κεφαλὴ γωνίας is not so much the final stone but a sharp stone at the corner of the building against which men stumble and fall.” J. Jeremias has also seen a relationship of this concept to Luke 2: 34. Treating ἀθῶς, ἀθινως, in ThWKittel (Eng) IV: 268-280, he writes (pp. 271-272): “Perhaps the concept of the rock is also present in Luke 2: 34 (οὗτος κεῖται εἰς πτώσιν καὶ ἀνάστασιν πολλῶν ἐν τῷ Ἰσαάκ) with its suggestion of either stumbling or being established. Certainly the two-fold effect which is ascribed to Christ as the stone bringing salvation or destruction in R. 9: 33 and 1 Pt. 2: 4-8 strongly suggests an allusion to Is. 8: 14 in Luke 2: 34.”
3 Ibid., esp. p. 274, notes 50-60.
4 Ibid., p. 279: “Thus Barn. 6, 2-4 combines the following sayings: Ps. 28: 22; Is. 28: 16; Da. 2: 34 f., 44 f.; Ex. 17: 6 and Nu. 20: 7 ff. (Zech. 4: 10). How these verses came to be referred to Christ is obvious when we see that many of them were already associated with the Messiah in later Judaism.”
5 Ibid., ThWKittel (Eng) IV: 272: “The christological rock (or stone) passages of the NT mentioned under 1. [p. 271] rest almost entirely on OT verses: Ps. 118: 22; Is. 28: 16; Da. 2: 34 f., 44 f.; Ex. 17: 6 and Nu. 20: 7 ff. (Zech. 4: 10). How these verses came to be referred to Christ is obvious when we see that many of them were already associated with the Messiah in later Judaism.”
Nativity Homilies

The association of all three texts from the Old Testament—Isaiah 28: 16, Isaiah 8: 14, and Psalm 118: 22—are evident in Paul’s letter to the Romans 9: 33, and the author of I Peter 2: 7 f. follows this example of Paul. The texts have been conflated both by Paul and by the writer of I Peter.¹

The next step in the exegesis of both Hesychius and I Peter 2: 7-8 is to relate the notion of salvation in Christ as a decision; for those who refuse to believe in him, destruction awaits and the stone becomes a stumbling block; whereas, for those who believe, it is a rising through faith in the word which results in salvation. "These notions are present in both homilies of Hesychius;² and these notions are present in Romans 9: 32 ff. and I Peter 2: 8."³

Hesychius rarely develops the Davidic descent of Jesus, but he does pay attention to the geographical references which relate to the city of David, whether that be Sion or Bethlehem. For this reason, the choice of Scriptural citations mentioning Sion is not accidental. It is this Jerusalemite’s mode of identifying the origins of Jesus, and may even relate to Mary as “daughter of Sion.”⁴ We have already referred to Caro and Aubineau on this point.

¹ O. CULLMANN, πέτρα, in ThWKittel (Eng) VI: 98.
³ G. STÄHLIN, προσκύπτω, in ThWKittel (Eng) VI: 754: “The starting-points and methods of the two combinations are, of course, quite different. P[a]u. is dealing with the destiny of Israel which stumbled on Christ, whereas 1 Pt. is dealing with the spiritual building in which Christ is the corner-stone.” (Cf. ibid., p. 753, n. 49; cf. also idem, σωκάθα­λον, in ThWKittel (Eng) VII: 353.)
⁴ E. LOHSE, Σιών, in ThWKittel (Eng) VII: 327: “Σιών is mentioned only 7 times in the NT. It occurs 5 times in OT quotations: Mt. 21: 5 (= Is. 62: 11; Zech. 9: 9) and Jn. 12: 15 (= Is. 40: 9; Zech. 9: 9) have the population in view when they speak of the daughter of Zion. In R. 9: 33 a quotation from Is. 28: 16 and 8: 14 is adduced in which the accent is on λίθον προσκάμματος. λίθος is also emphasized in 1 Pt. 2: 6 (Is. 28: 16). To prove the eschatological salvation of Israel from Scripture Paul in R. 11: 26 appeals to Is. 59: 20; Ps. 14: 7; ἐξ Σιών ὁ φοβομένος. Only in Hb. 12: 22; Rev. 14: 1 is there no quotation.”
PART III. ORIGEN AND BASIL: 
A COMPARATIVE/CONTRAST STUDY OF SCRIPTURAL TEXTS

A. Initial Considerations

Basil has a reflection on the verses of Luke 2: 34-35 in his letter to Optimus. Since the text of Origen probably was a source for Basil's thinking on this passage, the study of Origen's homily and Basil's letter is important. Origen's is the earliest of commentaries on this scene of Simeon and Mary; his commentary may have influenced the writers and preachers who followed; the closest in parallel to Origen's thought is that of Basil.

The comparison/contrast chart which follows presents the sequence of Origen and Basil's reflections with an emphasis on the Scriptures cited by them. Origen's complete homily is highlighted so that the context is presented in a better perspective when compared and contrasted with Basil's letter. The fact that the genre of Origen's homily differs from that of Basil's letter is important. If Basil is using Origen, it could well have been from memory rather than from a written source; after all, the context of a letter written to a bishop and relative seems to offer a more ad hoc presentation than a serious study from a former text. This statement is made in order to emphasize the difference between a homily and a letter. The best available source for Origen's homilies on Luke is that of Crouzel. Other studies are incomplete, for they lack the full context of the homilies.

What are the differences, especially from the comparison of Scriptural texts?

(A) Origen has an entire introduction to the text which Basil does not employ. The exact citation of Luke 1: 35 is first given and interpreted by Origen.

(B) In the same section 1, Origen also cites Luke 2: 33; I retain the defective Latin erat, even though in the introductory citation and in his XVI

---


3 Ibid., p. 250, section 1. It is important that the reader follow either the homily itself or the chart prepared for the comparison/contrast in the points presented.
homily Origen had used “erant” for the same verse. It probably is a mistake either in the manuscript or translation of Jerome.\(^1\)

(C) Section 2 of Origen is where the parallel begins, but Basil immediately proceeds to outline his entire response in three points:
1) 2: 34B - fall and rise
2) 2: 34C - sign of contradiction
3) 2: 35 - the sword.

Apparently Optimus was only interested in the sword and did not see the difficulties involved in 1) and 2); Basil brings this to his attention and offers his commentary on them.\(^2\)

Origen’s method of commentary is twofold in this homily. He presents a simple, literal interpretation as in sections one and two, and immediately follows with a more profound insight or reflection on the texts in the same sections. Origen is often working at two levels in his exegesis. Basil’s method is on one level. This is apparent in the comparative outline which follows.

(D) Origen’s application of the texts about Simeon’s prophecy is always made universally. Even when Mary is directly involved in his interpretation, the universal application is made to her; there are no exceptions to this in the present homily. His use of Matthew 26: 31 is universal. He strengthens his choice of the text by using Romans 3: 23, as we will see. His emphasis is on the “omnes scandalizabimini” and "omnes peccaverunt."\(^3\)

Basil in his first reflection on Luke 2: 34 is speaking more of the ascetical condition of each individual who must experience the fall and rise through faith in Christ. He is not as harsh or absolute about the sword of doubt for Mary, the apostles, and Peter. The key to understanding his interpretation of the “fall and rise of many” is through his use of Paul’s statement “When I am weak, then am I strong” (II Cor. 12: 10),\(^4\) a theme to which he returns in the last sentence of his letter.\(^5\) Basil indirectly refers to Genesis 3: 14: unbelievers are like the serpent who cannot fall for they are already at the level of the earth.\(^6\) It is interesting that Basil uses the same word for serpent both for the ascetical metaphor applied to the un-

---

2 \textsc{basil the great}, \textit{Letter 260}, PG 32: 964C.
3 \textsc{origen} (CROUZEL et al., eds.), \textit{op. cit.}, SC 87: 250, 252.
4 \textsc{basil the great}, \textit{Letter 260}, PG 32: 964D, 965A.
5 \textit{ibid.}, PG 32: 968A fine.
6 \textit{ibid.}, PG 32: 965A.
believer (μετὰ τοῦ δόξων) and for the sign which Moses used in the desert (Numbers 21: 8 τὸν δόξαν ἐπὶ σημειῶθ᾽).²

(E) Origen uses several texts which are not presented by Basil; for example, John 9: 39 which contains the paradox of Jesus, “I came into this world to divide it, to make the sightless see and the seeing blind.”² Perhaps he intends to lead his listeners to an understanding of the phrase “the downfall and the rise of many in Israel.” For him Israel would mean “to see God.” He says: “in Israel, hoc est in his, qui plena possunt acie et ratione conspicere.”³ He also had referred to Adam and Eve whose eyes were opened (Genesis 3: 7).⁴

(F) Origen’s use of II Timothy 2: 11 and Romans 6: 5 completes his arguments more fully than Basil who does not make use of these texts. They are an excellent choice for showing the “fall and rise” in Christ.⁵

(G) The triple example of falling and rising is similar. Origen’s examples are more rudimentary and not as nuanced ascetically as the contrasts of Basil.⁶

(H) Origen extends his universal application of the sign of contradiction even to the Virgin Mother; the Resurrection, the prophetic announcements, and the words of Scripture are also each seen as a sign of contradiction.⁷

B. Luke 2: 35 in Origen and Basil⁸

The comparative/contrast outline clearly indicates the fact that both Origen and Basil have the same Scripture texts at certain points of their development. It is here that Basil gives evidence of knowing and remembering the interpretation of Origen on the sword which pierces Mary’s heart. We must also remember that Optimus had expressly asked Basil to explain the text of Luke 2: 35.⁹ This text is the high point in both Origen’s homily and Basil’s letter.

¹ *Ibid.*, PG 32: 965B.
² *Origen* (CROUZEL et al., eds.), *op. cit.*, SC 87: 252.
⁹ BASIL THE GREAT, Letter 260, PG 32: 964C.
Two texts are important for seeing the similarity of their interpretation. In introducing his exegesis about the sword (Luke 2: 35a), Basil uses the text of Hebrews 4: 12, thereby giving to the sword a revelatory meaning. Though today's exegetes may disagree about such a use,¹ the biblical understanding of both Origen and Basil enabled them to use the Scriptures from cover to cover without restricting themselves to the narrower use of texts, especially parallel texts. For the Fathers, revealed ideas are parallel; the words do not have to match perfectly; the thought contained within the passage which helps them to understand another passage is more important to them. Thus, Origen may have used this text of Hebrews 4: 12. If so, then Basil is especially dependent on Origen at this point of his interpretation. In Crouzel's edition there is a Greek fragment which has been attributed to Origen which is almost identical to Basil's text.²

Origen cites the text of Matthew 26: 31 (Crouzel gives Mark 14: 27 as the text cited, but Matthew 26: 31 is the better choice.).³

"Omnes vos scandalizabimini in nocte hac": Basil: Πάντες σκανδαλίσθησθε ἐν ἑμοί.⁴ Both Origen and Basil apply the text to everyone, though the immediate Scriptural context applies it to all in the sense of all of the apostles present at the supper and following Jesus to Mount Olivet (cf. Matt. 26: 30). There is another difference, however. Basil emphasizes the (ἐν ἑμοί) "in me," while Origen emphasizes the time of the Passion "in nocte hac." Matthew 26: 31 is the better choice of reference for it contains both expressions of emphasis, whereas Mark 14: 27 reads: διὰ πάντες σκανδαλίσθησθε.

Basil implicitly refers to John 19: 25-27, for he says Mary is standing at the cross (παρεστῶσα τῷ σταυρῷ).⁵ Origen is concerned, once again, about universal salvation which means all have to be redeemed by Christ, including Mary. If Mary was not "scandalized," then Jesus did not die for

¹ R. E. Brown, op. cit., p. 462: "Much of this reflection is poor methodologically, for it seeks to interpret Luke through non-Lucan material—material of which Luke and his community may have been totally ignorant."
² Basil The Great, Letter 260, PG 32: 964C. An almost exact parallel to the Greek fragment given in Origen (Crouzel et al., eds.), op. cit., SC 87: 494 (Frag. 43; in Rauer, GCS, Origenes Werke IX = Frag. 69), n. 2: "Ce passage est identique à Basile, PG 32, 965C. Cependant le glaive, symbole de la Parole de Dieu, selon la citation de Hebr. 4, 12, se retrouve dans Ambroise, II, S.C. 45, p. 99. Nous avons donc conservé ce passage."
³ Origen (Crouzel et al., eds.), op. cit., SC 87: 256.
⁴ Basil The Great, Letter 260, PG 32: 965C.
⁵ Ibid.
her sins. He uses the citation from Romans 3: 23 as a tour de force to strengthen his position: “Omnes peccaverunt et indigent gloria Dei, justificati gratia ejus et redempti.” He also attends to the mention of the time of the Passion as he had done in Matthew 26: 31 (in nocte hac); after Romans 3: 23 he says, “utique Maria illo tempore scandalizata est.”

Basil does not use Romans 3: 23. He returns to the scene of the Annunciation which Mary recalls (Luke 1: 32, 33, 35)—a point which Origen also takes up, but not as completely—“You brought him forth as a virgin recalling Gabriel’s words” (Luke 1: 35). Basil does, however, refer to John 11: 50 which has a similar connotation to Romans 3: 23. Basil says, “For the Lord must taste of death for the sake of all, and being made a propitiation for the world, He must justify all men in His blood.”

Origen definitely imputes the guilt of sin to Mary: “pertransibit infidelitatis gladius et ambiguitatis murcrose ferieris.” Basil does not definitely say she sinned. He says, “Even you will feel a certain perplexity about your soul. . . Therefore, some doubt will touch even you yourself who have been taught from above concerning the Lord.” For Basil, this is the sword which pierces Mary’s heart.

Origen returns to the Mount of Olives in having Christ say, “Pater, si possibile est, pertranseat calix iste a me” (Mt. 26: 39). Basil does not cite this text. The letter of Basil ends with a short comment on Luke 2: 35b: “that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.” His words are consoling: “Swift healing will come from the Lord (ταχεία της ἁπασίς)” for the disciples, for Mary and for Peter. He returns to a thought he had begun in point one, what was human proved unsound in order that the power of the Lord might be manifested (II Cor. 12: 10; I Cor. 1: 18, 21, 25).

Origen’s homily continues on, but he, too, addresses the meaning of Luke 2: 35b saying, these thoughts are the evil thoughts of men which must be made known so that they may be healed. He breaks into a penitential response from Psalm 32: 5 and shows through Isaiah 44: 22 that sins will be

---

1 ORIGEN (CROUZEL et al., eds.), op. cit., SC 87: 258.
3 ORIGEN (CROUZEL et al., eds.), op. cit., SC 87: 258: 7.
4 BASIL THE GREAT, Letter 260, PG 32: 968A.
5 ORIGEN (CROUZEL et al., eds.). op. cit., SC 87: 258.
7 Ibid., fine.
The rest of his homily is concerned with Anna and widowhood.

Basil, then, does not impute any sin to Mary. His words are sensitive and filled with hope. He has used Origen’s material without being constrained to maintain the same opinion.

C. Outline — COMPARISON AND CONTRAST:

of Origen’s and Basil’s Comments on Luke 2: 34-35
(with Emphasis on Scriptural Texts Used or Alluded to by Them)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>ORIGEN</th>
<th>BASIL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>HOMILIA XVII: SC 87: 250-263</td>
<td>EPISTOLA 260: PG 32: 964C, 965, 968A</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Legend: * texts used directly
( ) implicit texts
- difference (in italics)

1. Exact citation of * Luke 1: 35 which means Jesus was born of Virgin.

   
   pater illius = Joseph because
   
   simple interpretation:
   
   1) he cared for the Savior;
   
   more profoundly:
   
   2) Luke is concerned about naming Joseph for the order of genealogy.

---

1 Origen (Crouzel et al., eds.), op. cit., SC 87: 260.
2 L. Gambero, “La Madonna negli scritti di San Basilio,” Mater Ecclesiae XV (1979) 44: “La Madonna ha dunque sofferto il dubbio ai piedi della croce del Figlio; ma questi riconfermò i suoi discepoli e la sua stessa Madre nella fede, di cui Maria è divenuta altissimo modello.” We must remember that Mary stood as a believer at the Cross; Basil had informed us that those who are unbelieving never have stood, but remain earth-bound like the serpent (Gen. 3: 14).
Admirabantur:
1) at Angel’s words
2) at heavenly multitude
3) at shepherds
which means they marvelled exceedingly
“vehementissime mirabantur.”

Savior came for fall and rise

1) simply means: for unbelievers and believers
2) more profoundly means:
   the same would fall and rise
   - use of * John 9: 39 to explain meaning: “In judicium ego veni, ut, qui non videbant, videant et, qui videbant, caeci fiant.”
   Adam et Evae oculi sunt aperiti (Gen. 3: 7).

3. * Luke 2: 34c: Savior will make of my fall a rising
just as prophets fall on their faces before a revelation to be purified of their sins
* II Tim. 2: 11: si commortuim sumus, et convivemus
* Rom. 6: 5: si conformes facti sumus mortis, conformes et resurrectionis erimus.
Nativity Homilies

ORIGEN

pagan/in you must fall
love of prostitution/fall
sinner/must fall.


“In Israel = qui plena possunt acie et ratione conspicere.”

All things touching upon the mystery of salvation are bound up with this sign of contradiction:

1) The Virgin Mother is a sign of contradiction
   a) Marcionites
   b) Ebionites

2) Even Resurrection is a sign which divides opinions.

5. Arguing over meaning of Resurrection

   * John 20: 26
   Even words of heretics against prophets saying He did not fulfill them
   Even Scripture is contradictory sign for unbelievers.


   Fragment in Greek—In Luc. Hom. XVII, 6, SC 87: 494, frag. 43; RAUER (GCS, Origenes Werke IX) 256, frag. 69.

   The sword means the word

BASIL

lower nature/higher
fornication/chastity
irrational/rational

* returns to text: “for the fall and rise of many.”

2) A sign which is contradicted


B. Sign is indicator of something uncertain or obscure—Various opinions on Incarnation: anti-Arian.

3) The sword = the word which has the power of trying and of discerning thoughts, and which extends “even to the division of soul and mind, of joints and marrow, judging the inmost thoughts.”
ORIGEN

which tries and penetrates "even to dividing the soul and mind, the joints and the marrow, judging even the inmost thoughts."

* Heb. 4: 12

Even Mary's soul will be pierced and that of all the apostles, Peter especially; for as the Lord says:
"Omnes vos scandalizabimini in nocte hac."

* Matt. 26: 31

If Mary was not "scandalized" then "Non est mortuus Jesus pro peccata ejus."

Yet, * Rom. 3: 23: "Omnes pectaverunt et indigent gloria Dei, justificati gratia ejus et redempti."
"...utique et Maria illo tempore scandalizata est."

7. This is what the prophecy of Simeon means, that even though you know you brought him forth as a virgin recalling Gabriel's words (Luke 1: 35):

Pertransibit infidelitatis gladius et ambiguitatis mucrone ferieris.

Greek Patristic Exegesis (4th C.)

BASIL

* Heb. 4: 12

Every soul is tested at the time of the Passion because the Lord has said:
"All will be scandalized in me."

* Matt. 26: 31

Mary stands at Cross (implicit John 19: 25-27).

She recalls testimony and words of Gabriel:
- secret of her conception
- miracles of her Son
"Even you will feel a certain perplexity about your soul."

"For the Lord must taste of death for the sake of all, and, being made a propitiation for the world, He must justify all men in His blood." (— John 11: 50)

Therefore, "Some doubt will touch even you yourself who have been taught from above concerning the Lord." = the sword.
when you see Him crucified, 
dead, subjected to ignominy, 
and when he has said, "Pater, 
si possibile est, pertranseat calix iste a me."
* Matt. 26: 39

8. * Luke 2: 35b: These thoughts are the evil thoughts of men, these must be made known so that they are healed.


Dixi: annuntiabo iniustitiam meam contra me Domino.


9. Anna now mentioned by * Luke 2: 36a: fasted, was chaste: received gift.

10. Widows addressed.

11. Recalls * I Cor. 1: 2 Virgins, widows in Church.
* I Pt. 4: 11.
PART IV. AMPHILochIUs AND HESyCHIUs:
COMMENrATORY ON EZEKIEL 44: 2

A. Introduction

The birth of Jesus Christ from the Virgin Mary is the mystery of the
Incarnation. The Fathers have seen this mystery as a paradox which can be
understood only through Christian faith. Nevertheless, they wrestled with
Scripture texts from both Testaments in order to understand this mystery
of salvation. The feast of Hypapante presented an occasion for their use of
texts which were the source of Luke’s Infancy Narrative, especially in the
prescriptions for presentation and purification. The presentation of Jesus
in the Temple led several of the Fathers to see a relationship between the
texts of the Old Testament behind Luke’s account (Luke 2: 22-24) and
Ezekiel 44: 1-2. The latter text enables them to proceed further and deeper
into the paradox of the mystery of Christ’s birth from the womb of Mary
which was closed to man, open to the Lord alone, and which, because of
His special power, remained intact (closed and unharmed) after the birth
of Christ. The Old Testament background of Luke’s account of the prescrip­
tion: “Every male opening the womb shall be consecrated to the Lord,” is
taken from Exodus 13: 2, 12, 15.

Amphilochius has seen and developed the relationship of Ezekiel
ἄγιον τῶν κυρίων κληθήσεται. He explains the versicle in this manner:

For every virgin the law of nature is such that only by intercourse with
a man can her womb be opened and then can she conceive and bring
about a birth. But in the case of our Savior it is not in this manner, for
without intercourse the womb of the Virgin was opened and he proceeded
immaculate so that what is said, “every male opening the womb will be
called holy,” refers only to the Lord.²

Amphilochius contrasts Christ’s birth to the defiled births of Cain, Esau,
and Reuben—all who were firstborn, but not holy to the Lord. Jesus, how-

¹ J. A. De Aldama, Virgo Mater, Biblioteca Teologica Granadina, 7 (Granada: Facul-
tad de Teologia, 1963), esp. ch. 6: “La virginidad en Partu en la exegesis patristica de
Ex. 13, 12 y Ez. 44, 2,” pp. 129-182.

² AMPHILochIUs (DATEMA, ed.), Or, II. In Occursum Domini, CCG 3: 43 (Or. II: 2,
ll. 49-53).
ever, is announced by Gabriel who says “the holy one to be born of you will be called a son of God.”

Amphilochius then explains the apparent contradiction of the prescription “every male opening the womb” by having recourse to the text of Ezekiel 44:2: “This gate belongs to the Lord and he shall enter and he shall go out yet the gate will be closed.” By the power of the Lord nothing remains closed and all is opened to him. It is here that true virginity occurs where the Lord enters and opens the womb, yet does not harm the virginal womb.

Aldama has studied Ezekiel 44:2 and its relationship to Exodus 13:12. He explains that this latter text was ordinarily interpreted in the manner of Origen, but the Fathers of the fourth century in relating the text to Ezekiel 44:2 have progressed and, at the same time, maintained the tradition of Origen. Both texts are seen as the word of God; the text of Ezekiel complements and resolves the difficulties of the phrase “opening the womb.”

Aldama has also found a similar pattern of thought and the use of both texts in a work attributed to Gregory of Nyssa. Even if unauthentic, the work belongs to the same epoch. Since it is not specifically within the texts studied in this thesis it is left aside; moreover, Aldama has given us the history of the use of this text.

Caro mentions the text in his study of Proclus of Constantinople. The text depicts for Proclus the mystery of the divinity and humanity which is manifested in the normal birth and at the same time virginal birth of Christ.

---

1 *Ibid.*, ll. 54-60.
6 R. CARO, *op. cit.*, MLS 3 (1971) 90: “Parto y concepción, dos momentos virginales de este misterio inefable: ἐγεννηθη, ὁ καὶ τῶν θυρῶν πελεσμένων εἰσελθῶν ἀκολούθως . . . el Emmanuel abre las puertas de la naturaleza como hombre, pero como Dios no rasga los sellos de la virginidad, sino que sale del seno materno como entró por el oído, nace como fue concebido . . .” (Cf. *Laudatio in sanctissimam Dei genitrice Mariam*, PG 65: 692A.) —This homily dates from during or after Ephesus. The text can be added to those studied by ALDAMA, *op. cit.*, p. 147 and n. 51.
Hesychius of Jerusalem has cited the text of Ezekiel 44: 2 in his works. Our procedure will consist in citing the text from *Homily I, De Hypapante*, then *Homily VI, De Sancta Maria Deipara*, and, finally, *Homily V, De Sancta Maria Deipara*. Aubineau's work answers Aldama's question about the existence of a second homily, *De Hypapante*. There is no citation of Ezekiel 44: 2 in this recently published homily.

**B. Homily I, De Hypapante** (Hesychius)

Fr. M. Aubineau demonstrates the first homily on the Hypapante as a work which is essentially biblical. He gives among many texts cited, that of Ezekiel 44: 1-2 which Hesychius uses to honor the virginity of Mary. The same text is seen in relationship to Exodus 13: 2, 12, 15 as implicit in Luke 2: 23b. The entire context is the presentation in the temple; Hesychius comments on the entire periopoca Luke 2: 22-35.

He shows us his biblical acumen while noting that this prescription of the law ("Every male opening the maternal womb will be sacred to the Lord.") is surpassed by the Legislator of the law, Christ himself, for "in fact he has not opened but has kept closed the gate of the Virgin; he has not violated the seal of nature, he has not caused any shame to her who has borne him: indeed he has left intact the sign of her virginity." Hesychius leads the listener to the text to which he has already hinted—"If you do not believe this, learn from what Ezekiel says (citing all of Ezekiel 44: 1-2)."

We are a long distance from the commentary of Origen which influenced many of the Fathers. The emphasis is no longer on the text of Exodus 13: 12 but on the fulfillment of Ezekiel 44: 2 in the event of Jesus Christ being born of the Virgin without in any way destroying her integral virginity. The power of Christ as legislator enables him to accomplish the prescription indicated by Luke, for he goes beyond the law while accomplishing the

---

1 HESYCHIUS (AUBINEAU, ed.), *op. cit.*, Vol. I. *Les homélies I-XV*:
3 HESYCHIUS (AUBINEAU, ed.), *op. cit.*, p. 7.
6 ORIGEN (CROUZEL et al., eds.), *op. cit.*, *Hom XI V: 7-8*, SC 87: 224, 226. (Cf. ALDAMA, *op. cit.*, pp. 132-133.)
prescription, for only He is holy to the Lord. Amphilochoius referred this only to Jesus; Hesychius, through explaining how Christ fulfilled the prescription as legislator, showed how Jesus accomplished the magnificent event foretold by Ezekiel 44: 1-2. Hesychius has gone from the biblical text to another, but, even better, he has moved from text to event: the Incarnation and its effect on the Virgin. Hesychius has advanced the understanding of the mystery and has clearly affirmed the integral virginity of Mary after the birth of Christ.

There is evidence from his use of the Septuagint text that Hesychius has actually rephrased the words of the text to show precisely what he understands of Mary’s virginity. He definitely believes her to be virgin after the birth of Christ. He has taken verse three of Ezekiel and incorporated the “going in” (only v.2) with the “going out” of verse 3.1 This totally corrects the exegesis of Origen which saw no man entering Mary’s virginal womb, but when Christ was born he opened her womb, thereby changing the integral state of Mary’s virginity. Hesychius, by rephrasing the citation, has a perfect comparison for what he received from the Christian tradition about the nature of Mary’s virginity. We are a long way from Origen.

Hesychius now has established his understanding of the mystery. He returns to the first text, Luke 2: 23 (Exodus 12: 2, 12, 15): “Every male opening the womb shall be called holy to the Lord,” and makes clear “this One is not only holy: for he excels in holiness; the more he distinguishes himself by his birth, the more he transcends the precept of the Law.”2

C. Homily V, De S. Maria Deipara (Hesychius)

Fr. Aubineau shows that the use of Ezekiel 44: 1-2 in this homily is the third of biblical comparisons used by Hesychius.3 Bound up with the comparison is another Scriptural text, John 20: 19, in which Hesychius sees Jesus rejoining his disciples on Easter evening though the doors were closed (τῶν Ἐυαγγελισμένων in Hom. V, 2: 20,26).4

2 Ibid., II. 16-18, p. 30.
4 Ibid., pp. 122-123: Il ne reste plus à l'orateur qu'à transposer en jouant des mêmes verbes au sujet du sein (πόλη, Ὀύγα) de Marie, pour exploiter les versets d'Ézéchiel en
The homily has an advanced nuance of honor for the Virgin. She is addressed personally by the preacher. The titles taken from Scripture are directly addressed to her ("Another [Ezekiel] has named you Eastern Gate.").1 Aubineau has shown that the "theophores" are the prophets who have given these titles2 to Mary.

Hesychius is consistent. He speaks again in this homily of the gate which leads outside. Here the birth of Christ, not his conception, is meant. Mary has become the gate of life presented for God’s only Son, facing the East, for the "true light illuminating every man was coming into the world," leaving her womb, as from a nuptial couch. He addresses Mary personally: "You have brought the king within although the gates were closed, and yet again you have led him outside: He the King of glory, in fact, neither in his conception nor in any manner in his birth, has opened the gates of your womb, nor unloosened the bonds of your virginity."3 What is evident is that Hesychius' thought is the same as in the first homily; here, however, his theological reflection comes more to the fore than does his biblical exegesis. The passage is not dependent on the biblical text as in I, De Hypapante; moreover, it is more personal and spontaneous; one could say it is almost presented in a devotional manner. We are closer to Ephesus.

D. Homily VI, De Sancta Maria Deipara (Hesychius)

Fr. Aubineau uses the common elements of Homily V and Homily VI to establish the authenticity of Hesychius' authorship for both. He states that Ezekiel 44: 2-3 is cited accurately in Homily VI: 7: 18-20, while in Homily V: 2: 19-29, Hesychius lengthily exploits the same verses to affirm the virginity of Mary after the birth of Christ.4

Even more crucial to the question of establishing the authenticity is to discover whether Hesychius has cited the text in a manner similar to Homily

faveur de la maternité virginal: . . . Tu as introduit (elosphógyayes) le roi au-dedans, bien que les portes fussent fermées, mais de nouveau tu l’as produit au-dehors (eikhógyayes). . . ."

1 Ibid., Hom V: 2: 19, p. 160.
2 Ibid., p. 161, n. 2 and p. 156, showing the correct use of tóv theóforóv and rejecting Caro's defense of the title theóforos for Mary.
4 Ibid., p. 181: "... l'homélie VI se montre discrète sur ce point, insistant plutôt sur la conception virginal. Offrirait-elle un stade de pensée moins élaborée?"
**I, De Hypapante.** Then the result would be that there are definite biblical facts or data which corroborate the arguments of authorship. Hesychius, again, does rephrase the text of the Septuagint just as he had done in *Homily I, De Hypapante*; thus the authorship of Homilies I, V, and VI are rendered more probable—not that they are called into question, but this internal evidence makes the comparative study of these texts a key to better interpretation.

**Conclusions**

Hesychius uses the text of Ezekiel 44: 1–2 in three of his homilies (*Homily I, 3; Homily V, 2; and Homily VI, 7*). By means of a transposition of the words *καὶ ἐξηλύσεται* from Ezekiel 44: 3 into Ezekiel 44: 2 the virginity of Mary is affirmed before and during the birth of Christ. This transposition helps us to identify Hesychius as author of all three homilies. The text as cited is neither consonant with the Septuagint nor the Hebrew for Ezekiel 44: 2. Hesychius applies the *entering* and *leaving* (*καὶ εἰσελύσεται καὶ ἐξηλύσεται*) to the person of God of Israel in *Homily I, De Hypapante* 3, 14. Both in the original Hebrew and in the Septuagint, the subject who goes out is the king or prince of Ezekiel 44: 3. In *Homily V, De Sancta Maria Deipara*, Hesychius is directly addressing the Virgin Mary as the Eastern Gate. She is the one who introduces the king within and leads him outside while the doors remain shut. He is, of course, applying this to Mary's virginity. Finally, in *Homily VI, De Sancta Maria Deipara*, it is the Lord who enters and leaves while the door remains closed. In all three citations the proximity of the two verbs *εἰσελύσεται* and *ἐξηλύσεται* indicates the intention of Hesychius as author and preacher. If we look at his use of the texts, then compare them with the Septuagint and Hebrew of Ezekiel 44: 1–3, we will observe that Hesychius has changed the text for his homiletical purpose which is to affirm the virginity of Mary at the conception and birth of Christ. In fact, in *Homily V* the virginity of Mary is affirmed after the birth of Christ.
A. \( \delta \beta\alpha\tau\omicron\varsigma \kappa\alpha\iota\epsilon\tau\alpha\iota \pi\omicron\iota\lambda, \delta \ddot{\delta} \beta\alpha\tau\omicron\varsigma \omicron \kappa\alpha\epsilon\kappa\alpha\iota\epsilon\tau\omicron \) (LXX)

Amphilochius makes use implicitly of Exodus 3: 2 in *Oratio I, In Natalitia Domini.* The text is found within his introduction to the theme of the homily. The feast of the Nativity has been prepared both by the prophetic types of the past and the more recent proclamation of the salvific event. The invisible mystery has become visible though the Incarnation. One of the signs from the past was the fire Moses saw in the bush. It is one among many such signs, for Abraham saw a visible manifestation of God through the angels, Isaiah through the seraphim, and Ezekiel through the cherubim (Gen. 17, 1; Isa. 3: 2; Ezek. 1: 4-28). Amphilochius, by means of these four names—Abraham, Moses, Isaiah, and Ezekiel, has spanned the beginnings of salvation history from the first believer, Abraham, to Moses, the great prophet and recipient of the Torah, down to the classical prophets, Isaiah and Ezekiel. All of these believers experienced the invisible mystery of God in signs which were visible.

The burning bush was the sign Moses experienced on Horeb while tending sheep for Jethro, the priest of Midian (Exodus 3: 1). This is the simple and yet profound setting Amphilochius gives to the sign of the burning bush: \( \pi\alpha\lambda\nu \dot{o} \varsigma \delta\omicron \varphi\theta\eta \tau\omicron \ \text{M} \omega\omicron\upsilon\sigma\omicron\acute{\iota} \ \delta\omicron\alpha \ \pi\upsilon\delta\omicron\varsigma \ \epsilon\nu \ \tau\acute{\iota} \ \beta\acute{\alpha}\tau\omicron. \) It is an example, one among several, chosen by the preacher to emphasize that the manifestation of God was prepared for in the stages of salvation history. Amphilochius does not return to this theme of the burning bush in his homily nor in any other of his discourses.

B. Gregory of Nyssa’s Use of the Text Exodus 3: 2 in *Oratio in Diem Natalem Christi*

Lampe’s entry under \( \beta\alpha\tau\omicron\varsigma \) (a bramble bush) indicates the wide range of meanings the word has had for the Fathers. It is his sixth meaning which concerns us in this study, namely, the burning bramble bush as typifying Mary in her Incarnational role. It is precisely this interpretation that we find

1 Amphilochius (DATEMA, ed.), *op. cit.*, CCG 3 (1978), Or. I. *In Natalitia Domini*: 1, ll. 44-45, p. 6.
3 Lampe, p. 294, col. 1.
in the Nativity homily of Gregory of Nyssa. The development (which is the most complete) of the type is found in section five of the homily. The author of the homily is using the example of the burning bush to help his listeners understand the integrity of Mary’s virginity. He has just made the statement that the “Virgin has become Mother and yet remains (διαμένει) virgin.”

Giving his personal interpretation (τοῦτο μου δοκεῖ), the author describes the phenomenon not as a local experience for Moses, but as a temporal one which causes him to look toward the future. We have, once again, a setting within salvation history and a fulfillment of the prophetic sign through the event of the Incarnation, especially in the virginity of Mary. The last text used by Gregory was Isaiah 7: 14 in which the Virgin and Emmanuel were emphasized both in the biblical text and his interpretation of the text. The transition to the burning bush image is a continuing development of the same thought concerning the virginity of Mary within the Incarnation. He clearly says, “What in fact was then signified in the flame and bush, with the passing of time which intervenes, especially becomes apparent in the mystery of the virgin. Just as then the bush was alighted by flame and yet did not burn itself out, so this Virgin who brings forth light is not corrupted.”

Gregory of Nyssa has brought the framework of the text into a comparison of Mary’s virginity with the burning bush. He is beyond Amphilo­chius who has seen the text simply as a theophany which helps us to understand the plan of God in preparing mankind for the Incarnation. Gregory sees the details of the Incarnation by relating the mystery to the virginity of Mary. The section on the burning bush is pastorally concluded in this manner: “Do not [listener] be embarrassed by the similitude in understanding that the bush signifies the body of the Virgin bearing [our] God.”

C. Hesychius: Exodus 3: 2 as Presented in Homily V, De Sancta Maria Deipara

Fr. Aubineau has an excellent introduction to the text of Exodus 3: 2 which is the second comparison Hesychius used to teach about the virginal
maternity of Mary.\(^1\) The thought, as interpreted by Hesychius, parallels his other example which we have already seen, the eastern gate of Ezekiel 44: 1-2, in the sense that Mary brings forth her son without losing the seal of her virginity. As the seal was not broken by man, nor does Jesus in coming forth from her womb break the virgin’s seal. The list of verbs drawn up by Hesychius serves to develop the stages of her maternity, while the antitheses serve to explain further the mystery of Christ’s birth from the Virgin.\(^2\)

Hesychius uses the text within the second section of his homily, wherein he develops mysteries which were confided to the prophets and the “God-carriers” among whom is Moses. Like Gregory of Nyssa, he exposes the lines of prophecy-fulfillment within salvation history, but we are at a later epoch; Hesychius personally addresses the Virgin with her own titles (Σωλ μεν οὐν διὸ παρθένε).\(^3\) Fr. Aubineau has remarked on the breadth of development of Hesychius’ thoughts. Briefly summarized they are:\(^4\)

1) the only begotten son has flesh and the virgin is Θεοτόκος.
2) Mary is illumined (as by fire) but is not consumed, because she brings forth her son without the opening of her womb.
3) she has conceived him without tarnishing her virginity.
4) she has brought him into the world as a newborn while retaining as sealed her womb.
5) she fed him with her milk without anyone else touching her breasts.
6) she brought forth a little infant without experiencing a man as his father.
7) she became a mother without becoming a spouse.
8) a son was raised and one does not discover his father.

In the sixth homily, Hesychius does not mention the theme of the burning bush and is more reserved in his appeal to the prophets. *Homily VI* does seem more distant from Ephesus than *Homily V*, as Aubineau has astutely remarked.\(^5\)

---

\(^1\) HESYCHIUS (AUBINEAU, ed.), op. cit., I: 121.

\(^2\) Ibid., p. 122: “On lira la quinzaine de lignes consacrées à l’exégèse du ‘Buisson ardent’, en prêtant une particulière attention au vocabulaire: aux verbes exprimant les étapes d’une maternité (συλλαμβάνειν, κυροφοείθαι, τίκτεω, διαγεν), aux mots qui désignent le ‘sein maternel’ (γαστήρ, κοιλία, μήτρα), à ces images qui suggèrent la parturition virginielle non sans braver les pudeurs modernes (οὐκ ἄνοιγεν, οὐ φθείρειν, οἶκείθαι, σφραγιζέω).” (Cf. R. CARO, op. cit., MLS 3 [1971] 51.)

\(^3\) Ibid., Hom. V, De S. Maria Deipara: 2, I. 1, p. 160.

\(^4\) Ibid., II. 5-12, p. 160.

\(^5\) Ibid., pp. 179, 189. M. Aubineau dates *Homily V* before 428 (p. 183).
PART VI. EXCURSUS ON LITURGICAL SETTING OF THE HOMILIES

Included in several of the homilies treated here are indications about the liturgical celebration of the feast. Within such contexts, the interpretation offered by the Fathers was primarily a call of faith to respond to the Word of God in the special event of the Incarnation. To summarize, an example from each of the Fathers is given.

A. THE CAPPADOCIANS

Amphilochius

In his first sentences of the Oratio I, In Natalitia Domini, Amphilochius tells us of the feast being celebrated: "Today is the festive day of the birth of Christ our true God."\(^1\) The entire homily is constructed on the traditional model of an encomium.\(^2\)

In the opinion of K. Holl, the second homily, De Occursum Domini, may be the most ancient witness to the feast of Hypapante.\(^3\) But C. Datema in his recent critical edition finds this impossible so early after the introduction of the feast of Christmas.\(^4\)

Basil

In Homilia in Sanctam Christi Generationem (PG 31: 1457), Basil begins with an exhortation to the faithful to honor the birth of Christ in silence. He tells us that the feast is also called Theophania.\(^5\)

---


\(^2\) Ibid., pp. xii-xiii: "Le plan de l'homélie suit le modèle traditionnel pour un encomium: dans la première partie l'orateur met en valeur la signification de la fête; ensuite, pour la partie centrale, il fait un exposé sur le mystère, et il termine en incitant les fidèles à vivre selon leurs convictions."

\(^3\) K. Holl, Amphilochius von Ikonium ... (Tubingen, 1904), pp. 61 ff., 104 ff. (Cf. A. De Groot, op. cit., p. 15.)

\(^4\) Amphilochius (Datema, ed.), op. cit., CCG 3, p. xiii.

Gregory of Nazianzus

Gregory of Nazianzus' *In Theophania, sive Natalitia Salvatoris*\(^1\) confirms Basil’s statement about the two names for the feast, since, in the liturgical context of the celebration, Christ’s birth is also his manifestation (Τὰ δὲ νῦν θεοφανία, ἡ πανήγυρις, εἴτεν Τενεβλία).\(^2\) God indeed has appeared to men—preexistent as Word, yet incarnate for the sake of our salvation. The restoration of ourselves is completed through his becoming flesh (δεόσαντας ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ τοῦ εὖ εἶναι διὰ κακίαν, πρὸς αὐτὸ πάλιν ἐπαναγάγῃ διὰ σαρκώσεως).\(^3\)

Gregory of Nyssa

In his *Oratio in Diem Natalem Christi*,\(^4\) Gregory of Nyssa uses two psalms to sound the note of celebration of the feast of the birth of Christ: “Blow the trumpet at the new moon as a sign of your solemnity” (ἐν εὐσήμω ἡμέρᾳ ἑορτῆς ὁμοῦ).\(^5\) He takes up the theme of light for this feast, since it is the Lord who enlightens mankind. There is a thematic inclusion; for Gregory both begins and ends with light, concluding with John 1: 4. The Prologue was, perhaps, one of the texts for the feast.\(^6\)

The theme continues with Psalm 118: 24: “This is the day the Lord has made, come, let us exult and rejoice in it.” He adds words from St. Paul which corroborate the theme: “Because at the coming of the Lord, day increases and night is done away with’ . . . the brilliant rays of the Gospel enlighten the whole world.”\(^7\)

**B. THE ANTIOCHENES**

John Chrysostom

John Chrysostom’s homily on the birth of Christ\(^8\) mentions that it is not quite ten years that they have celebrated this specific feast.\(^9\) He develops

---

\(^2\) PG 36: 313C.
\(^3\) Ibid.
\(^5\) Ibid., PG 46: 1128A.
\(^6\) Ibid., PG 46: 1149B fine.
\(^7\) Ibid., PG 46: 1128B, 1129D.
\(^9\) Ibid., PG 49: 351.
three reasons for the celebration of the feast. He has the same excitement and joy in announcing the feast in his other Nativity homily; the introduction is in fact an eclogue announcing the feast and its benefits to mankind.

Theodore of Mopsuestia

Theodore of Mopsuestia gives us no indications of liturgical celebration for the context of his commentary on the Gospel of John. But in the parallels chosen from his works on the Nicene Creed and the Lord’s Prayer, we have evidence from the content of both treatises that each was a Liber ad baptizandos, that is, a handbook for the preparation of the catechumens during the Lenten season. The second booklet contains a commentary on the Lord’s Prayer, on the sacrament of baptism in general, and on the Greek liturgy.

C. THE JERUSALEMITES

St. Cyril of Jerusalem

Cyril’s Catecheses (X-XII) were studied since they treat of Christ’s Incarnation. These lectures were not delivered at liturgical celebrations. They were given during Lent to those who were preparing for baptism. Cyril delivered an introductory lecture followed by eighteen more lectures which were to form a complete course of instruction for those preparing for

1 Ibid., PG 49: 351-354: 1) the feast of Christ’s birth was accepted quickly and objections against it were removed by a clear explanation of the event; 2) the historical context of Luke’s second chapter leads us to accept the basis for this tradition about the birth of Christ; 3) the determination of the date is based on the knowledge of the time of the Feast of Tabernacles, when Zachary would have offered incense in the temple. John the Baptist’s conception took place during this time, and from Luke’s statement regarding Elizabeth’s pregnancy of six months at the time of the Annunciation to Mary, the feast of Christ’s birth could be determined.


5 Idem, Commentary . . . on the Nicene Creed, p. 7.
the fullness of the Christian faith through baptism.\(^1\) Dom Cabrol has listed lectures VI-XI during the sixth week of Lent; lecture XII belonged, according to Cabrol, to the seventh week.\(^2\) It is to the Mystagogic Lectures that we must turn for precise information from Cyril on the liturgy.\(^3\)

**Hesychius of Jerusalem**

M. Aubineau has pointed out the liturgical context of the homilies of Hesychius in his critical edition. In *Homily VI*, the account of the Annunciation is developed, not, however, for the Feast of the Annunciation, but rather for a feast of Mary celebrated on the fourth day of the octave of Epiphany.\(^4\) Hesychius introduces his homily on this occasion, saying "... it is indeed an assembly in honor of the Virgin who surpasses all women, since she received voluntarily the Word of God Himself."\(^5\)

Aubineau has noted the significance of Hesychius in that he shows the development that takes place prior to Ephesus. His *Homily VI* seems to predate the Nestorian crisis (before 428); it insists more on the virginal conception than on the divine maternity. *Homily V* is an amplification of *Homily VI* and emphasizes more the title Theotokos; for it, Aubineau proposes the date 432 or 433: that is, after Ephesus.\(^6\)

---

3 SelectLibNicPNic VII: xii-xlvi (1894).
4 Hesychius (Aubineau, ed.), *op. cit.*, I: 185: "J. Grosdidier de Matons a édité une hymne de Romanos le Mélode, pour l’Annonciation, dans laquelle il a écrit ‘un des premiers kontakia, voire le tout premier, composé à l’occasion de la première célébration de la fête, au 25 mars’. L’hommélie VI d’Hésychius, qui traite assez longuement du mystère de l’Annonciation, en une occasion qui n’était pas encore une fête de l’Annonciation, se situe un bon siècle plus tôt.” (Reference is to Romanos, *Hymn IX*, in SC 110, p. 16.)
5 Ibid., *Hom. VI*: 1, l. 4-7, p. 194.
6 Ibid., p. lxvi and pp. 192-193: "Ce sixième document [l’hommélie VI] en raison de son ancienneté, éclaire d’un jour nouveau les origines de la liturgie des fêtes de la Vierge à Jérusalem; il permet de mesurer des progrès dans la formulation des doctrines mariales, avant et après le concile d’Éphèse; il révèle, dans la Ville sainte, en ce premier quart du v\(^{\text{e}}\) siècle, des antagonismes profonds, qui ne désarment pas, entre les deux communautés juive et chrétienne.”

---

332
CHAPTER IV

THE USE OF THE SCRIPTURES AND MARIAN IMPLICATIONS IN THE HOMILIES AND WRITINGS OF THE FATHERS

Introduction

This final chapter proposes the theme of the virginity of Mary from the texts presented in Chapter Three. Mary emerges as the Virgin from whom Christ is born (ἐκ παρθένου). The Scriptures and Mary is another title that can be applied to this chapter, since the statements of the Fathers spring from the texts which speak of the virginity of Mary. Her virginity is seen as a historical fact presented to the people; it is never expressed in a symbolic fashion. Her human flesh is the real medium or instrument for the humanity of Jesus Christ.

PART I. ON THE VIRGINITY OF MARY

THE CAPPADOCIANS

1. Amphilochius of Iconium

The principal works of Amphilochius are Oratio I, In Natalitia Domini, and Oratio II, In Occursum Domini. Parallels are taken from Fragmenta II, 19-21; Homilia IX: 5, 150-155; Contra Haereticos, 876-880; De Abrahamo; and De Recta Fide.

Amphilochius understands the virginity of Mary within the context of the Incarnation. Her virginity is always seen in relationship to Christ; never is it spoken of in isolation from his birth and its revealed meaning within the salvific purpose of that birth.

1 For all these works, see: AMPHILOCHIUS (DATEMA, ed.), op. cit., CCG 3.
The setting of Amphilochius' first homily is in a panegyric celebrated in honor of the birth of Christ from the perfectly pure and undefiled Virgin.\(^1\) The mystery of the unblemished Virgin is not known by reason, but by the revelation of God's word descending among us, effecting salvation through freeing us from sin.\(^2\) That salvation is accomplished for the whole world, for the Lord has proceeded from a virginal womb to redeem what has been corrupted.\(^3\)

Amphilochius understands the Lukan statement, "Every male opening the womb shall be sacred to the Lord" (Luke 2: 23), to mean that the virginity of Mary could only remain if the Lord himself opened the womb without intercourse. All of the texts are seen in relationship to God, not to the work of man.\(^4\) Thus Mary's virginity persists.

In *Oratio II*, Amphilochius uses the texts of Ezekiel 44: 2 and Psalm 23: 7, applying their words to the virginity of Mary—only the Lord could open and not harm the "virginal gates."\(^5\) Amphilochius develops his interpretation of the texts in an apophatic and mystical sense.

Within the same homily, Amphilochius sees the text of Isaiah 9: 5 ("A son is born for us, a son is given to us") as fulfilled in Christ "being born" from a virgin (διὰ τὴν ἐκ παρθένου γέννησιν) and in his "being given" from God. ("What is born is seen with the eyes; what is given is known by the mind and the thought alone.")\(^6\)

Amphilochius, along with the other Fathers of this era, speaks of the reality of the human nature taken from the Virgin or taken from Mary ἐκ Μαγίας ἀνθρωπον).\(^7\) The use of the preposition ἐκ emphasizes the material cause of her virginity within the flesh of Christ. Irenaeus had used the same expression ἐκ Μαγίας to combat the Gnostics (e.g., *Adversus Haereses III*: 21, 9-10). The origin of Jesus is almost always expressed by this preposition within the New Testament: ἐξ ζησ (Mt. 1: 16); ἐκ πνεύματος ἀγίου (Mt. 1: 20; cf. Luke 1: 35); ἐκ σπέρματος Δανίδ (Rom. 9: 5); ἐκ Θεοῦ (John 1: 13).\(^8\)

---

\(^1\) Ibid., Or. I. In Natalitia Domini: 1, ll. 30-31, p. 5.
\(^2\) Ibid., 2, l. 67, p. 6.
\(^3\) Ibid., 3, ll. 92-96, p. 7.
\(^4\) Ibid., Or.'II, In Occurrsum Domini: 2, ll. 50-54, p. 43.
\(^5\) Ibid., 3, ll. 74-75, p. 45.
\(^6\) Ibid., 6, l. 159, p. 57.
\(^7\) Ibid., Or. IX. In Illud: Non Potest Filius a Se Facere: 6, ll. 150-155, p. 179.
Marian Implications

The stress is definitely on the reality of the human flesh taken from the Virgin Mary. In De Abrahamo, Amphilochius says, "The just man understood that the One who came forth from Mary would suffer in [his] body."

Mary's accompanying Joseph to the temple for Jesus' circumcision shows that Amphilochius understood her virginity to be permanent (τεχθεὶς ... ὑπὸ τῆς ἀειπαρθένου Μαρίας ... ἀνατραφεὶς ὑπὸ τοῦ Ἰωσήφ καὶ τῆς ἀγίας παρθένου Μαρίας ...). "Having been born of the ever-virgin Mary ... and reared by Joseph and the holy Virgin Mary ..."

The entire mystery of Mary within the Incarnation is summed up by Amphilochius in the treatise De Recta Fide. The biblical reflection of Amphilochius leads him to a profession of faith in the birth of Christ within time and from the Virgin Mary. His existence with the Father surpasses that from the Virgin. The divinity of Jesus wherein he is God is an ineffable mystery.

2. St. Basil

In Basil's reflection on the birth of Jesus, the virginity of Mary is interpreted primarily from the Septuagintal reading of Isaiah 7: 14. He turns to the text three times within his homily and elucidates the meaning of Mary's virginity.

His biblical reflections center upon the person of Christ in this birth; Mary is seen in relationship to Christ. The reality of Christ's birth of a virgin mother is drawn out from the texts used: Isaiah 7: 14, John 1: 14. These parallel texts emphasize the twofold generation of Christ, one in time and one in eternity, and, indirectly, on two occasions the text of Baruch 3: 38 is suggested.

---

1 AMPHILOCHIUS (DATEMA, ed.), op. cit., De Abraham, ll. 420-421, p. 302.
2 Ibid., Contra Haereticos, ll. 876-880, p. 208.
3 Ibid., De Recta Fide, ll. 50-57, pp. 316, 318.
4 Ibid., Or. II. In Occursum Domini: 6, ll. 156-157, p. 57, ("Esteem not lightly this child, because he is a child. He who is a child is coeternal with the Father.")
5 Homilia in Sanctam Christi Generationem, PG 31: 1464D, 1465B, 1465D.
6 PG 31: 1460C: συγκαταβαίνωντα σοι καὶ διὰ σαφῆς; PG 31: 1461C: ὢδὸς ἐν σαφῇ;
cf. PG 31: 1464A.
7 PG 31: 1468A: παρθένος καὶ μήτηρ
He affirms the holiness of this woman’s virginity, and manifests his own devotion to the tradition that she always remained a virgin. For Mary’s virginity, Basil uses both the reputable source of Ignatius and also an apocryphal tradition (*Protoevangelium Jacobi*). Finally, he sees Mary’s call to virginity within the mystery of salvation history; for him, her virginity is an election.

In summary, Basil has both demonstrated a biblical context for the virginity of Mary within the history of salvation and showed the understanding of her virginity for his day in the Christian tradition.

3. Gregory of Nazianzus

Gregory of Nazianzus, the theologian, interprets the virginity of Mary in the same manner as his fellow Cappadocians; however, he uses parallels which are bolder and more paradoxical. “Christ is born in the flesh” (*Χριστός ἐν σαρκί*), is associated with “His birth from the Virgin” (*Χριστός ἐκ Παρθένου*). The fear which sin had brought about is now, through Christ’s birth, overcome, and hope is present.

The reality of the human nature of Jesus is stressed by his being born in the flesh of the Virgin while yet being God the Word; thus the celebration is of the birth of Christ. It also can be called a manifestation of the Word (*Γενέθλια . . . Θεοφάνια*).

Jesus Christ is presented as a striking fulfillment-type of Melchisedech: nature’s laws being reversed. First, he is without a mother, being eternally one with the Father; then, at his birth in time, he has a mother but no

3 PG 31: 1464C: ἔξελέγη ἡ μακαρία Παρθένος, οὐδέν τῆς παρθενίας ἐν τῆς μνηστείας παραβλαβεῖσθαι.
4 Oratio XXXVIII, In Theophania, PG 36: 313A.
5 Ibid., PG 36: 313C.
father, so to speak. The same thought is clearly expressed by St. August- 

The paradox continues under a new image, towards the end of the same homily on the Nativity or Manifestation, only there it is the contrast of flesh with spirit. Mary the Virgin is prepared by the Holy Spirit so that Jesus' birth from a virgin is fitting in that the contraries of flesh and spirit become united. God deifies through the spirit; human nature is deified. Gregory proclaims it as a wonderful union and an admirable paradox.  

4. Gregory of Nyssa

Gregory of Nyssa's Oratio in Diem Natalem Christi has an abundance of references to the virginity of Mary. Once again he agrees with the other writers and preachers of his time in delineating the reality of the humanity of Jesus Christ which comes through the undefiled virgin's flesh. He nuances his understanding of her virginity by setting it within the imagery of the temple, and sees Mary as a consecrated offering to the Lord. In the note of consecration he has added something new to the general thought of the Cappadocians on the virginity of Mary. In fact, the shadow of temple imagery is persistent in his homily on the birth of Christ, and using such a notion of a consecrated offering enhances the unity of the homily. His use of an apocryphal writing (Protoevangelium Jacobi) adds to the temple scenery, for it refers both to the legend of Mary being within the temple precincts as a child and to her name being called Mary because of the unexpected grace of her birth to her parents.

1 Ibid., PG 36: 313B.

2 AUGUSTINE, Tract. 8 in Joannem: "Christus singulariter natus de patre sine matre, de matre sine patre; sine matre, Deus, sine patre, homo."

3 Oratio XXXVIII, In Theophania, PG 36: 325B.

4 Oratio in Diem Natalem Christi, PG 46: 1127-1150.

5 PG 46: 1128B (διὰ δὲ τῆς παρθένικης ἄφθορίας ἐπὶ τὸν ἀνθρώπινον βίον διαπεράσας). It is also apparent that he is strongly rooted in the tradition of using ἐκ παρθένου to bear out the meaning of the reality of the human flesh taken from the Virgin. (Cf. PG 46: 1136D; cf. PG 45: 1256B.)

6 PG 46: 1140D: Ἐπειδὴ δὲ τὴν ἀναγέννησαν τῷ θεῷ σάρκα, οἶλον τι τῶν ἁγίων ἀναθημάτων ...

The biblical text of Isaiah 7: 14 as found in Matthew's Gospel is the text which Gregory of Nyssa uses to explain the how of Mary's virginity. Unlike other women, Mary is "both mother and virgin" (Ἡ γὰρ αὐτὴ καὶ μήτηρ καὶ Παρθένος ἄτρι). His reference to the burning bush of Moses as an image of her virginity links the prophetic sacredness of the apparition of Yahweh to Moses with what has been said by Isaiah 7: 14. Then he mentions the meeting of Jesus and John the Baptist while they were within their mothers' wombs, indicating the superiority of Jesus over the Baptist. Though the texts are very loosely used in an accommodative sense, there is, nevertheless, a sense of the history of salvation and Mary's role within it. The burning bush image keeps the sacredness of the temple image and God's presence in mind and unifies the homily once again.

In Gregory's understanding of Mary we find that she is presented as a virgin at the time of conception, at the birth of Jesus, and always remains a virgin. He does not raise the question of other children nor does he express any other thoughts beyond this simple expression: "The virgin becomes a mother and remains a virgin" (Ἡ Παρθένος μήτηρ γίνεται, καὶ διαμένει Παρθένος), but this implies ever-virgin.

After the birth at Bethlehem, the Virgin remains untouched by man and embraces her son. Gregory emphasizes the reality of the human nature of the baby, while the Virgin Mother rejoices.

Gregory has Mary formulate questions to the Angel Gabriel which help the listener to understand more deeply the meaning of the mystery being announced. Through the power of the Most High and the coming of the Spirit, Christ is formed in the Virgin. This development of thought on the Incarnation is the result of Gregory meditating upon Luke 1: 35 and I Corinthians 1: 24 of Paul.

1 PG 46: 1136A.
2 PG 46: 1136B.
3 PG 46: 1136D ('Επειδὴ τοίνυν προλαμβάνει τὸν ἐκ παρθένιας ὁ ἁπό τῆς στείρας).
4 PG 46: 1136A.
5 PG 46: 1141B: καὶ ἡ μετὰ τόκων παρθένος, ἡ ἁφθορος μήτηρ περιέπει τὸ ἐγγονον.
6 PG 56: 1137C: ἐπαγάλλεται ἡ παρθένος τῷ τόκῳ.
7 PG 46: 1141B: Τοῦ οὖν ὄρφιστον Θεοῦ ἡ δύναμις, ἦτες ἐστίν ὁ Χριστὸς, διὰ τῆς ἐπελεύσεως τοῦ ἁγίου Πνεύματος ἐμμαρτύροντα τῇ παρθενίᾳ.
THE ANTIOCHENES

5. St. John Chrysostom

The favored text of John Chrysostom for speaking of the Virgin is Isaiah 7:14 with its fulfillment counterpart, Matthew 1:23. In his fifth homily on Matthew's Gospel, Chrysostom takes up the Emmanuel saying of Isaiah 7:14 as it is used in Matthew 1:23. Joseph is told to take Mary as his wife. Having meditated on the prophet's word, Joseph the just one believes and is opened to the mystery of Mary's virginity. The angel uses the text which Joseph was familiar with to help him understand Mary's virginity. In fact, it is not merely a prophet who said this, but "what was said by the Lord" through a prophet. It is at this point that Chrysostom explains how the Septuagint, which, he says, was written a hundred years before Christ, is more worthy of belief than those who argue that the text means a young girl. Chrysostom is referring to the later translations of Aquila and Symmachus and Theodotion who translate 'almāh by νεάνις. Of course, this brings out the fact that Chrysostom considers the Septuagint inspired, while he was not familiar with the Hebrew text itself. He was more a man of Church tradition than an inquiring exegete on this point.

In his commentary on John, the same Scriptural references are used to affirm Mary's virginity. Only here the texts of Isaiah 7:14 and Matthew 1:22-23 are seen in the context of prophetic fulfillment at the birth of Christ.

---

1 *In Matt., Hom. 5*, PG 57: 56C. The complete list of references to Isaiah 7:14 is comprised of:
   a. *In Isaiah 7*, PG 56: 82B.
   b. *Eccola 34*, PG 63: 827A, D.
   c. *In Matt., Hom. 5*, PG 57: 56-57D, 58A.
   d. *In Psalm. 44*, PG 55: 195C.
   e. *In Psalm. 47*, PG 55: 216A.
   f. *In Psalm. 117*, PG 55: 335D.
   g. *In Joh., Hom. 13*, PG 59: 87B.
   h. *De Incomprehensibilita Dei*, PG 48: 738C.
   i. *De Consubstantiali contra Anomoeos*, PG 48: 765C.
   k. *In Illud, Pater, . . .*, PG 51: 37B.
   l. *In Natalem Christi*, PG 56: 389AB.

so that by “mentioning the facts of the venerable prophets, the evangelists lead the listener to singular events.”

Chrysostom sees Mary as virgin physically and not merely symbolically in her relationship to her Son Jesus Christ. He speculates what her action would have been had the Annunciation been different—even a possibility of her suicide, but in returning to the text of Luke we see that Chrysostom considers her admirable. His other thoughts on Mary are simply part of his enthusiastic oratory to catch the audience’s attention. The context is the historical reality of the setting—at least, as he understood it.

His listings and interpretation of Isaiah 7:14 lead to a confirmation of the title virgin as his preferred title for Mary, the Mother of Jesus. For Chrysostom, the context of a prophetic announcement in Isaiah—clearly stated in the Septuagint and understood by this master of the Greek tongue as her physical virginity, not a symbolic one—was primarily that which was prophesied in Isaiah 7:14 and fulfilled in the birth of Jesus, Matthew 1:23 being the terminal fulfillment text. In his homilies, Chrysostom does not use the New Adam theme in order to arrive at the virginity of Mary in the mystery of the Incarnation. Though this theme may be in homilies attributed to Chrysostom, the virginity of Mary and the Davidic origin of Jesus are emphasized. The prophetical Incarnation text for Chrysostom is Baruch 3:38 seen in relationship to Isaiah 7:14.

Within his fifth homily on the Gospel of St. Matthew, Chrysostom uses the Emmanuel prophecy four times. Chrysostom discusses the objections of those who say the text reads “a young woman” and not “virgin.” The text is invaluable:

“And a Virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a Son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel.” How was it then that His name was not called Emmanuel but Jesus Christ? Because he did not say “you (sing.) shall call,” but “they shall call,” that is, the multitude, and the issue of events. For here he puts the event as a name: and this is customary in Scripture, to substitute the events that take place for names. Therefore, to say, “they shall call Him Emmanuel” means nothing else than they shall see God among men. And He has indeed always been among men, but never so manifestly.

---

1 In Joh., Hom. 13, PG 59: 87.
2 In Matt., Hom. 4, PG 57: 45A.
3 Cf. PG 56: 385-394.
4 In Matt., Hom. 5, PG 57: 56D.
5 Ibid., PG 57: 56D-57A.
Chrysostom reads “they shall call him Emmanuel”—contrary to the original Septuagint and more consonant with Matthew 1: 23. He interprets the article or pronoun as definitive, that is, he explains it to specify this virgin. That the woman is a virgin is essential to Chrysostom’s interpretation. For him it cannot be otherwise. Undoubtedly, he is following through on his belief taken from Matthew 1: 23 and from the orthodox doctrine of the Church, so strongly attested in the fourth-century Fathers. He uses parallel passages from the New Testament to corroborate his meaning of the definite article, e.g., John 1: 19, John 1: 25, John 1: 1.¹

Chrysostom does not use the text of John 1: 13 (the variant reading) to support his affirmation of the virginity of Mary. There is only a remote possibility of his having been aware of the singular number: “[He] who was born, not of blood nor of the will of the flesh nor of the will of man, but of God.” The Peshitta Syriac upon which his text was based reads in the plural: “those who.” The text² in which the remote possibility is present fits better under the topic of typology which will be presented in part four of this chapter.

To help mankind reach an understanding of the mystery of the Virgin, Chrysostom makes use of comparisons with Sarah, Rebecca, Rachel, and Elizabeth; the miracle of the birth from a Virgin is more acceptable when seen in the light of God’s divine pedagogy for mankind.³ We have seen the same approach used by other Fathers of the Church referred to in this study.

Chrysostom in his homily on the birth of Christ defends the virginity of Mary by means of grammatical parallels to the use of the word “until” in Matthew 1: 25. Apparently, then as now, the literal and rigid understanding of the text could imply that Mary had other children after the birth of Christ. Chrysostom demonstrates that “until” is a biblical word which has a wider nuance.⁴ It is interesting that Chrysostom nowhere in his consideration of the texts about the brothers and sisters of Jesus infers these were children of Mary. In fact, he is not even bothered by such a consideration! ¹

¹ In Isaiah 7, PG 56: 83D-84A; Ecloga 34, PG 63: 828B.
³ Hom. in Genesis 25, PG 54: 445D, 446A-D, 447; Peccata Fratrum Non Evulganda, PG 51: 359A-D, 360A-D.
⁴ Ecloga 34, PG 63: 830D.
Finally, in his homily on the birthday of Christ, Chrysostom, as a true Antiochene, emphasizes the reality of the human nature which is assumed as immaculate flesh from a virginal womb. The emphasis is clearly on Christ being fully human through his birth of the Virgin.¹

6. Theodore of Mopsuestia

Theodore of Mopsuestia accepts the virginity of Mary, seeing in her the source for the true humanity of Jesus. He also indicates that Jesus was of the seed of David and Abraham. His statement, made to those preparing for baptism, seems to have been drawn from Luke 1: 35 and Romans 1: 3 for he mentions Jesus was of Mary "by the power of the Holy Spirit" and is "of the seed of David and Abraham."² He insists that the reality of Jesus' human nature born from a woman is formed by the Holy Spirit in the maternal womb without the agency of a human father.³

Theodore, in explaining the statement from the Creed: "And was born of the Virgin Mary and crucified in the days of Pontius Pilate," interprets it in such a way that Jesus is born of the Virgin as a man and according to the law of human nature. Though he uses the thought of St. Paul in Galatians 4: 4 to emphasize further the reality of Jesus' human nature born from a woman, he is not, as Cyril of Jerusalem, using the text to refer explicitly to the virginity of Mary.⁴

In another statement about the Creed, he shows the human instrumentality of Mary and its importance in the economy of salvation.

They [our fathers] wrote and arranged the Creed in short terms, and this is the reason why they said: "Who was born of the Virgin Mary and was crucified in the days of Pontius Pilate." They only said the beginning and the end of the economy that took place on our behalf, as the beginning of all grace is His birth of Mary, and its end is crucifixion.⁵

¹ In Diem Natalem, PG 49: 359CD.
² A. Mingana, ed. and trans., Commentary . . . on the Nicene Creed, p. 67.
⁴ A. Mingana, Commentary . . . on the Nicene Creed, p. 67.
⁵ Ibid., p. 63.
THE JERUSALEMITES

7. Cyril of Jerusalem

Cyril, more than the other Fathers studied in this thesis, adheres to a plain and almost literal paraphrasing of the texts of Scripture in his interpretation. This trait enables us to discover a basic understanding of the virginity of Mary for him as a Jerusalemite. There is only one way of speaking of Jesus’ birth and that is ἐκ παρθένου. He gives us his own preference for that expression when he has almost slipped into saying διὰ παρθένου.1 The text can serve as an interpretative norm for all other references to the birth from the Virgin. This interpretation essentially separates Cyril from any Gnostic tendency to remove oneself from the reality of the human flesh assumed by Christ from the Virgin. The role of the Virgin is to be seen in the physical giving to Christ from her real human flesh.

Since the basic texts studied were from Cyril’s Catecheses X-XII, the more important references will follow the sequence of the chapters:

(1) Christ is the Lord and Son of God. He is born in Bethlehem of Judea (cf. Luke 2: 10) in the city of David. Gabriel is the servant of God used for the announcement that the Lord would be born of a Virgin (γεννᾶ-σθαι ἐκ Παρθένου).2

(2) The same archangel Gabriel bears witness to Mary, the Virgin, the Θεοτόκος.3 Here Cyril uses a faith expression for the Virgin which is not found in Sacred Scripture but is part of his understanding of her role within the Incarnation. As a Jerusalemite, this term Θεοτόκος enables us to see how universally acceptable was that expression, that even a strong literalist like Cyril would employ it freely.

(3) It is within his Catechesis XII, Illuminandorum, that the title of Virgin predominates, more precisely because Cyril is basing his instruction

1 Catechesis XII, De Christo Incarnato, PG 33: 741B: Αἱ ἐκ παρθένου τῆς Εὐας ἡλθέν ὁ Ὁδάνατος, ἔδει διὰ παρθένου, μᾶλλον δὲ ἐκ παρθένου, φανερὰ τὴν ζωήν.

An important contribution to this notion is found in R. M. Grant, op. cit., pp. 116-121; more in keeping with the Patristic understanding, cf. pp. 117-118.


3 Ibid., PG 33: 685A: μαρτυρεῖ Γαβριήλ ὁ ἀρχάγγελος τῆς Μαρίας εὐαγγελιζόμενος μαρτυρεῖ Παρθένος ἢ Θεοτόκος.
Greek Patristic Exegesis (4th C.)

on the Emmanuel text, Isaiah 7: 14.¹ His first sentence exhorts the ones to be baptized to raise their hymn to the God born of a Virgin.² It may be suggested that the Prologue of John was used as a hymn in the communities. This seems plausible, for Cyril immediately cites verses 1 and 14 of the Prologue.

(4) The true prophet Isaiah also says that Emmanuel would be born from a Virgin (ἐν παρθένῳ γεννηθήσεται).³ The same truth is expressed by the Church, namely, that the Word becomes flesh from the Virgin and the Holy Spirit (ἐν παρθένῳ καὶ πνεύματος ἁγίου).⁴ The reality of the Incarnation is thereby assured, it is not merely in appearance but in truth (ἐνανθρωπησάντα, οὐ φαντασία, ἀλλὰ ἀληθεία).

(5) The most direct expression of Cyril’s belief about Christ and his birth from the Virgin is given in paragraph four: “Believe that He the Only-begotten Son of God—He himself was again begotten of a Virgin.”⁵

(6) All of his teachings about the birth of Christ from a Virgin are based on the Sacred Scriptures—this means both the Old Testament or, better, Hebrew Scriptures and the Gospels. From the latter, the manner, the place and the time are learned.⁶

(7) The tour de force text of Isaiah 7: 14 is now defended by Cyril. Even though he understands the text can mean a “young woman,” for him the ecclesial tradition has understood Isaiah 7: 14 from the Septuagint. Cyril justifies his usage from Scripture, I Kings 1: 4.⁷ In fact, there is no passage in which the word “'Almāh” can mean a married woman, but it could imply a maiden (virgin).

(8) The next development in his thought on the Virgin is to show that she is of the Davidic line. The standard texts of Luke 1: 32, II Timothy 2: 8, and Romans 1: 3 are used. All is framed within the structure of the ἐν

---

¹ Superscription of Catechesis XII, Illuminandorum, PG 33: 725A.
² Ibid., PG 33: 725A: τὸν ἐν Παρθένῳ γεννηθέντα Θεόν.
³ Ibid., PG 33: 728C bis.
⁴ Ibid., PG 33: 728 (3)C.
⁵ Ibid., PG 33: 729A. See also Catechesis XII, PG 33: 765B.
⁶ Ibid., PG 33: 729C. (Cl. PG 33: 744C.)
⁷ Ibid., PG 33: 753AB, 753C fine. (Cyril diligently searches the Scriptures to refute those who say νεάνις, that is, “young woman.” He has cited the Scriptures to prove his meaning: δι’τι καὶ η没有什么 ση Θεία Γαρ. He comes back to Isaiah 7: 14 to show that the text reads more than δι’τι Ἑλάβεν; rather, ἀλλ’ ὅτι ένηθεται ἢ παρθένος.)
The straightforward conclusion of Cyril is that the holy Virgin is therefore of David.\(^1\)

(9) He situates her virginity within the context of the creative goodness of God in forming human nature. The nuptials of the Virgin are with God. Mary is proclaimed (macarism) a woman of faith by Elizabeth.\(^2\)

(10) He refutes the pagan Greeks for their denying that it was impossible for the Christ to be born of a virgin.\(^3\)

(11) As Chrysostom does, Cyril develops the reasonableness of God being able to be born of a virgin. Had not barren women, like Sarah, given birth to a son?\(^4\)

(12) He also argues from the more evident miracles to the birth from a virgin.\(^5\)

(13) He returns to the creation narrative of Eve, the first woman, who was born motherless. Mary by the power of God and the Holy Spirit begets Christ.\(^6\)

(14) It is only Cyril who explicitly uses the one reference in St. Paul’s epistle to the Galatians which refers to the birth of Christ from a woman (Gal. 4:4) as affirming that woman to be a virgin.

Cyril reasons: Paul says, “God sent his Son not made of man and woman, but made only from a woman, that is, from a virgin. For that the virgin is also called a woman we showed above. For He who makes souls virgin, was born of a virgin.”\(^7\) The interpretation springs from Cyril’s belief more than from the text itself. There is no scholar in the twentieth century who has seen in Paul’s words the virginity of Mary being affirmed.

(15) The final references to the Virgin are all within the context of a parenesis meant for the listeners who are preparing for baptism. This pastoral concern of Cyril leads him to present Mary the Virgin as a model of faith.\(^8\)

Even though Mary is mentioned and her virginity affirmed, Cyril centers his thought on Christ Himself and always emphasizes that He is...
the object of his Scriptural concerns for the listening believers. Cyril of Jerusalem brings one back to Christ no matter what the context is—"One is the Lord Jesus Christ, an admirable name indirectly foretold by the prophets; Isaiah the prophet had said: 'Behold your Savior comes having his reward with him' (Isaiah 62: 11) . . . Jesus as he is manifestly called not by all, but by the angel."1

8. Hesychius of Jerusalem

Two homilies from among those recently published in M. Aubineau's edition of Hesychius2 were chosen in order to discover Hesychius' concepts concerning Mary's virginity and her role in the Incarnation. In the opinion of Aubineau, Homily II, De Hypapante,3 and Homily VI, De Sancta Maria Deipara,4 were written prior to the Council of Ephesus in 431 A.D. It is from these works that the following remarks are made:

First, Hesychius clearly states the physical virginity of Mary. Just as the other preachers and theologians of his epoch had used Isaiah 7: 14 and Baruch 3: 38 so, too, does this Jerusalemite. Within the setting of those two texts he states: "Indeed the Mother is a virgin even after the birth and she preserves unshakeable the seal of virginity which nature had granted."5 These thoughts are seen in the context of a series of texts from the prophets down to the birth of Jesus—a salvation history, so to speak, in which Hesychius includes the fact of the Mother remaining a virgin.6 The text also shows that Jesus Christ is the person on whom the Scriptures focus—through the prophets and then through Mary's virginal motherhood.

Secondly, Hesychius states in the opening verses of his panegyric that the Virgin surpasses all women.7

Thirdly, Hesychius uses extended series of questions as a fascinating way of developing the nature of Mary's virginity. Mary herself asks these

---

1 Catechesis X, De Uno Domino Jesu Christo, PG 33: 677A.
3 Ibid., Hom. II, De Hypapante, pp. 44-75 (text: pp. 61-75).
5 Ibid., Hom. VI: 8: 7-9, p. 204: Παρθένος γάρ ἡ μήτηρ, καὶ μετὰ τόκον διέμεινε τῆς παρθένιας σφεγγίδας ἡς ἡ φώσις ἐπέθηκεν ἀπαρασαλεύτους φυλάττοσα.
6 Ibid., p. 175. M. Aubineau lists the twelve citations from the Hebrew Scriptures, particularly Isaiah 7: 14, Baruch 3: 38, Ezekiel 44: 2-3, and Psalm 86: 5.
7 Ibid., Hom. VI: 1: 6, p. 194.
questions of Gabriel in the dialogue,\(^1\) and then the Magi discreetly avoid sixteen questions which Hesychius, for purposes of instruction, poses for them.\(^2\)

Fourthly, in *Homily II, De Hypapante*, Hesychius asks why the evangelist and writer of the divine genealogy mentions Joseph as father of the Child ("As the child's father and mother stood there wondering at the things which were said about him . . ." [Luke 2: 33]). It is Luke who had also explained how the Virgin would conceive and bear a son (Luke 1: 35). Luke has not forgotten, he simply mentions Joseph in order to protect the mystery of our salvation.\(^3\) This helps us identify Hesychius with those who followed the earlier tradition about this secret of Mary’s virginity.\(^4\)

Fifthly, Hesychius uses the expression ἐκ παρθένου to express the reality of the human nature of Jesus. In his homily on St. Stephen this expression is found within a text that has two of Christ’s important titles in the New Testament: "the Son of God" and the "Word-God." Hesychius thus shows the eternal generation of the Son from the Father and the reality of his human birth from the Virgin.\(^5\)

Sixthly, as Aubineau has observed, the use of the prophecy of Ezekiel 44: 2-3\(^6\) ("This gate will be kept shut. No one will open it or go through it, since Yahweh, the God of Israel, has been through it and so it must be kept shut.") is cited exactly, whereas in his later homily, Hesychius develops more at length the virginity of Mary "in partu." In *Homily VI* (from prior to 431 A.D., as already noted), the insistence is more on the virginal conception.\(^7\)

\(^1\) Ibid., Hom. VI: 2: 1-15, pp. 194-197.
\(^2\) Ibid., p. 171: "La discrétion des Mages, prosternés devant leur ‘roi’ et leur ‘Dieu’ (4, 17), est longuement citée en exemple: on énumère seize questions, seize ‘comment’ (πώς), qu’ils ont eu la sagesse de ne point poser! Ainsi ‘comment la conception est-elle divine, le sein sans semence, l’enfantement sans flétrissure’ (4, 3-4). A la différence de ce qu’on a constaté dans l’homélie V, on remarquera qu’Hésychius insiste ici sur la conception virginal en, ne faisant qu’une brève allusion à la virginité ‘in partu,’ sans le luxe de détails, quelque peu indiscrets, auquel donnaient lieu les images de ‘porte fermée’ et de ‘fontaine sceillée.’”
\(^3\) Ibid., Hom. II, De Hypapante, 8: 1-11, p. 68.
\(^5\) Ibid., Hom, IX, In S. Stephanum: 24: 3-6, p. 346: ὅ ἐκ Πατρὸς αὐτὸς ἐκ παρθένου ἐνθημησθή.
\(^6\) Ibid., Hom. VI, De Santa Maria Deipara: 7: 18-20, pp. 202, 204.
\(^7\) Ibid., p. 181: “... l’homélie VI se montre discrète sur ce point, insistant plutôt sur la conception virginal. Offrira-t-il un stade de pensée moins élaborée?”
PART II. MARY'S ROLE IN THE SOTERILOGICAL PURPOSE OF THE INCARNATION

In this second part, the place of Mary within the soteriological purpose of the Incarnation is brought out through a presentation of the texts studied. She will be seen:

(a) in the salvation history of God’s plan for his people;
(b) in the important fact of providing—either through Joseph, her husband, or her own lineage—a real connection with the Davidic line. This is an important historical fact for the Fathers; the Messiahship of Jesus is entirely based upon his descendance from David;
(c) in the biblical fulfillment of promises made to his people. All three of these points will be presented synthetically through the various statements made by the Fathers: the Cappadocians, the Antiochene, and the Jerusalemites.

THE CAPPADOCIANS

1. Amphilochius of Iconium

The soteriological purpose of the Incarnation is the predominant theme of the homilies of Amphilochius. Mary’s role is best expressed in Oratio I wherein the Lord has come from virginal bowels into a contaminated world for the salvation of the world (ὅπερ κόσμον λυτρώσεως). The need for a healer (λαέρ) of sickness is the image used for bringing about this salvation. This image springs from Jesus saying, “It is not those who are well who need the doctor, but the sick...” In turn, the faithful themselves are encouraged in the pærenesis of Amphilochius to become the seeds of salvation for all whom they meet. In the Oratio II (In Occursum Domini), Anna is a model for the faithful through her open belief that the Child

1 Amphilochius (DATEMA, ed.), op. cit., Or. I. In Natalitia Domini: 3, II. 92-93, p. 7.
2 Ibid., 4, ll. 123-128, p. 8.
Marian Implications

Jesus is the doctor-healer, the strong redeemer and the remover of sin.¹ The same homily concludes with the prophetic image of the sign of the cross (Ezekiel 9: 5-6) being realized in the saving Cross through which Jesus the Christ and Lord redeems the world.²

This redemptive purpose of the Incarnation is understood as the fulfillment of God's promises which are expressed in the text so often used within these homilies. The pattern of promise and fulfillment emerges from the concatenation of fixed biblical passages which serve as witness texts ("testimonia") to the Incarnation event. Amphilochius gathers texts which are now familiar to us through all of the Fathers of his era.³ The same promise-fulfillment pattern is present in his homily on Abraham:

... From the beginning the (things) that have happened were destined to happen, and none of the elders has failed to share the (things) that we (now) meditate upon. For God is the beginning and also the end, He whom Mary has borne as a man, the young man who is eternal.⁴

The context of universal salvation history is present in the background of Amphilochius' homilies. He sets the birth of Christ in the overall pattern of the history of mankind. In Oratio II this history is poetically sketched from creation, through Noah, through Abraham, and through Moses.⁵

¹ Ibid., Or. II. In Occursum Domini: 6, ll. 131-132, p. 53.
² Ibid., 8, ll. 253-256, pp. 71 and 73.
³ Ibid., Or. I: 2, ll. 51-66, p. 6: in which Baruch 3: 38, Isaiah 63: 9, Isaiah 7: 14 (Matthew 1: 23), and Isaiah 9: 5 appear; and Or. I: 3, ll. 78-95, p. 7: in which the testimonia are Isaiah 9: 5, Numbers 24: 17, Malachi 3: 20, and Zechariah 6: 12 which are all fulfilled in: "Today is born for us a Savior, who is Christ the Lord (Luke 2: 11)." By means of these texts, Amphilochius joins the soteriological purpose of the Incarnation with the birth of the Lord from a virginal womb. For example, the image of the Sun of righteousness (Mal. 4: 2) rising from on high is used as a poetic description of the salvific plan of God through the Incarnation. His immediate Scriptural source is Luke 2: 11 and 2: 32 ("For to you is born this day in the city of David a Savior, who is Christ the Lord."
⁵ Ibid., Or. II: 6, ll. 141-163. (Cf. De Abraham, p. 300, where the same historical perspective is presented through the persons of Adam, Noah, Abraham, Sarah, and Isaac, up to the Virgin and Christ Himself.)
The Davidic lineage of Jesus is presented but once in the Opera of Amphiloctius' works. This is a striking difference in Amphiloctius among the other Fathers studied.

2. St. Basil

Basil the Great in his homily on the holy birth of Christ states that God became flesh (Θεός ἐν σαρκὶ) in order that he might sanctify cursed human nature. He asks where is the effecting of this disposition καὶ τὸ ἐγκαθιστηριαίον τῆς οἰκονομίας ταύτης) and responds that it is from the body of the holy virgin (Παρθένου ἄγιας σώμα). His statements are based on a direct contemplative reflection of the text of Matthew 1:18: "When his mother Mary had been betrothed to Joseph, before they came together she was found to be with child of the Holy Spirit." Thus he combines both the soteriological importance of the Incarnation with the effective human instrument of the flesh taken from the body of the Virgin.

The election of a Virgin is most fitting for this mystery; her betrothal to Joseph adds a blessing to the married state as well. We have seen the election of Mary in Basil’s reflections on virginity; here, the election is in the history of the salvation of mankind in God’s plan. Basil sees Joseph as the protector of the chosen virgin so that she would not be calumniated nor mocked; virginity would have the protection of the married state.

Basil then develops the thought for the listener. Mary is seen within the history of salvation as the fitting bearer of the Lord. His words are exact: δὴ τὸ ἐγκαθιστηρία τῆς ἐνανθρώπησις τοῦ Κυρίου καιρὸς, πάλαι προορισμένος καὶ προδιαταγμένος πρὸ καταβολῆς κόσμου, τότε ἐνεισχύει καθ’ ἐν Πνεύμα τὸ ἁγιόν καὶ τὴν σώματος τοῦ Ἰησοῦ τῆς Θεοφόρου ἐκείνην συντήρασθαι σάρξα. (It was therefore a fitting time [event] for the Incarnation of the Lord, as formerly determined and predestined before the foundation of the world and thence brought about, that the

---

1 Ibid., Fragmenta II: 4, II. 68-69 p. 230; ἢ δὲ ἐκ τοῦ Δαυίδ ἐν ὑστέραις καιροῖς τεχθεὶς Ἰησοῦς. (Cf. the name David which appears also in Or. VIII: 1, II. 4 and 13, but without any Messianic context.)

2 St. Basil the Great, Homilia in Sanctam Christi Generationem, PG 31: 1464A. For the healing effect on mankind, cf. PG 31: 1461AB.

3 Ibid., PG 31: 146B. (Cf. J. McHugh, op. cit., pp. 168, 170, 300.)

4 Ibid., PG 31: 1464B ad finem.
Holy Spirit and power of the Most High made that flesh conform to the bearer of God.) His reflection returns to the text of Matthew 1: 18: "Before they came together she was found to be with child of the Holy Spirit." Basil uses the text of Balaam, "A star rises out of Jacob and a man shall arise out of Israel" (Numbers 15: 17) as referring to the Davidic dynasty from which the Messiah would come. The fulfillment of the prophecy and promise of God to Balaam is seen in the spiritual reflection of Basil upon Matthew 1: 18-25 and Matthew 2: 9: "And there in front of them was the star they had seen rising; it went forward and halted over the place where the child was."

Finally, the depth of God's love is shown in such a loving plan of salvation for mankind. Basil uses Titus 2: 11, Malachi 4: 2 and I Corinthians 15: 54 to express the loving kindness of God: "Ω βάθος ἀγαθότητος καὶ φιλανθρωπίας θεοῦ." 14

3. Gregory of Nazianzus

One of the soteriological principles of Gregory of Nazianzus is that only through the assumption of real human nature by Christ are we saved. Christ is in the flesh because he is from the Virgin. With his birth, once again the light is created, the Egyptians are vexed by darkness, and a people who were in darkness experience a great light. The old has passed away and all things are made new. The letter yields to the spirit; shadows are removed and truth makes its entrance. Natural laws are reversed; the figure of Melchisedech is brought to mind: he who was without a mother, afterwards (in Christ) is without a father (human). Gregory casts the above scriptural reminiscences into a history of salvation with the Incarnation being the apex of that saving action and it is applauded by all nations: "For a child is born

---

1 Ibid., PG 31: 1464D.
2 Ibid., PG 41: 1469B. Cf. JB, p. 205, n. 24g.
4 Ibid., PG 31: 1461B ad finem. Titus 2: 11: "... God's grace has been revealed, and it has made salvation possible for the whole human race." Mal. 4: 2 (= 3: 20): "... the sun of righteousness will shine out with healing in its wings." I Cor. 15: 54: "Death is swallowed up in victory."
5 GREGORY OF NAZIANZUS, Epistola 101, PG 37: 181C. (Cf. DSp 6, col. 940.)
6 Idem, Oratio XXXIV, In Theophania, PG 36: 313A.
for us, a son is given to us.”\textsuperscript{1} This birth in time is contrasted with the eternal generation of the Word; it is the former which is the cause of our salvation, and is that which restores us to what we had formerly lost.\textsuperscript{2}

The spiritual image of God is restored in mankind because of the Incarnation. The word who was the perfect image of the Father (ἡ ἀπαράδελφος εἰκόν, ὁ τοῦ πατρὸς ὅρος καὶ λόγος)\textsuperscript{3} was conceived of the Virgin (κυρηθεὶς μὲν ἐκ τῆς Παρθένου) thereby deifying human nature.\textsuperscript{4}

One can see that in his understanding of the soteriological principle of the Incarnation, Gregory of Nazianzus likewise develops one of his favorite themes, that of the divinization of the Christian.\textsuperscript{5}

\textbf{THE ANTIOCHENES}

\textbf{4. St. John Chrysostom}

Chrysostom frequently alludes to the soteriological purpose of the Incarnation and indicates the role of the Virgin within it. He has several modes of so doing, for example, using a collection of sacred texts which describe the fulfillment of God’s saving action among mankind; at other times, his use of Scripture is rapid—just in passing, as it were—as he develops salvation history with broad strokes. There are examples which are filled with profound theological statements which result from biblical reflections; and, finally, there are poetic descriptions of the salvific effect of Jesus.

In his sermon entitled \textit{Pater, Si Possibile Est, Transeal},\textsuperscript{6} we are fortunate to have a passage which gathers the most favored texts used for the Incarnation by the Fathers of the late fourth century. After catching the ear of his listener, Chrysostom starts with Christ’s conception in the womb of the Virgin, practically referring to the creation of human flesh from the clay of earth; he then shows the promises God has made through the prophets,

\begin{enumerate}
\item Ibid., PG 36: 313AB.
\item Ibid., PG 36: 313C: ἑφανε γὰρ θεὸς ἀνθρώπως διὰ γεννήσεως... τὸ δὲ, δι’ ἡμᾶς γενόμενος διστὲρων... δέοντας ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ τοῦ εἴδε εἶναι διὰ παιδίαν.
\item Ibid., PG 36: 321D, 324A ad finem.
\item Ibid., PG 36: 325B.
\item DSp 6, col. 948 alii imo.
\item In Illud, \textit{Pater, Si Possibile Est, Transeal}, PG 51: 37BC.
\end{enumerate}
Marian Implications

using the texts we have presented throughout this thesis. It is a veritable florilegium of scriptural texts. The texts are:

1) *Genesis 49: 9:* “From the prey, my son, thou art gone up; stooping down he couched as a lion.” Chrysostom is accurately citing the Septuagint. The verse is used to locate the human origins of Jesus in Judah. His power is affirmed because of His love for God, just as certain as the lion rises up certain of its prey. The Septuagint uses the term “lion” some 150 times. The passage of Genesis 49: 9 (upon which Revelation 5: 5 is based) is a passage which later Judaism interpreted in terms of the Messiah. The Messiah is compared to a lion in the Messianology of IV Esdras. Judah is that Lion (Gen. 49: 9) which is set up against the Eagle (Rome). He is of the seed of David.

2) *Isaiah 7: 14:* Chrysostom’s text is again closest to the Septuagint with the variation of *καλέσωσαι.* The text has sufficiently been commented on in the study of Chrysostom’s use of it and that of Baruch 3: 38.

3) *Isaiah 53: 2:* Chrysostom has taken liberties with the Septuagintal text: he prefaces “and we saw him” before the phrase “like a child, like a shoot from the parched earth.” In the Septuagint, the expression *καὶ εἶδομεν αὐτὸν* more correctly refers to the second phrase of 53: 2. Chrysostom could have used the opening words *ἀνηγγέλλαμεν ἐναντίον αὐτοῦ,* which the later Fathers used for divinely ordained proclamation. The text fits well with the notion of salvation, where in the Bible *διψάω* is used for yearning for salvation. Perhaps the Septuagint has intentionally substituted the thought of thirst for dryness as the presupposition of the publication of salvation. The passage is an important link towards understanding related passages which are considered Messianic. Moreover, the Peshitta, a source which Chrysostom knew, in-

---

1 G. Quell, *ἐκλέγομαι,* in ThWKittel (Eng) IV: 160.
2 W. Michaelis, *λέον,* in ThWKittel (Eng) IV: 252.
3 C. Colpe, ὁ νιὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου in ThWKittel (Eng) VIII: 427, n. 211: “... (cf. Mi. 5; Jer. 23: 5-8; Ez. 34: 23-31; Am. 9: 8-15; Is. 9: 11) ... ‘He is not pre-existent like the Son of Man (13: 26), though He is kept for the end of days, ... ’”
4 Rahlfs, p. 575; critical apparatus.
6 J. Schniewind, *ἀπαγγέλλω* in ThWKittel (Eng) I: 64 (notes 31 and 32: cf. I Cl. 16, 3; 18, 15 and Herm. v. 2, 1, 3; 3, 3, 1; M. Pol., 15, 1; 1 Cl., 17, 7).
7 G. Bertram, *διψάω* in ThWKittel (Eng) II: 227.
8 *Ibid.,* p. 228, n. 11.
The statements of Isaiah 53 were interpreted in a Messianic manner. There is evidence of a rabbi of the fourth century who used the same text Messianically. Unfortunately, the rapid rift between Judaism and Christianity led to removal of unwanted Messianic texts. The notion of ὀλίζα (shoot or root) definitely has a Messianic sense which relates our verse to Isaiah 11: 10.

(4) Isaiah 9: 5: Chrysostom cites the Septuagint accurately. We have already commented on the background of this text: “For a child is born to us, a son is given to us; upon his shoulder dominion rests. They name him Wonder-Counselor, God-Hero, Father-Forever, Prince of peace.”

(5) Isaiah 11: 1: Again, Chrysostom has accurately given the Septuagint’s reading for the verse. It may be that Chrysostom has, together with the other Fathers, related the text to Christ’s birth by taking it from Justin who has combined this text with another favored one for the Incarnation, Numbers 24: 17 (“A star shall rise out of Jacob”). The root of Jesse then is taken in a Messianic sense, that is, a new root which will establish a kingdom of peace and righteousness. Naturally, the title must be linked with David through whom the Messianic promise is founded. It is interesting that even excavations have given us a reminder of Isaiah 11: 1.

and par. to the correctly rendered ὀλίζα, also reminiscent of the Messianic 11: 1. This raises the question whether there may not be discerned in the LXX translt. a Messianic understanding. The reconstruction ἄνετειλε in 53: 2 might well pt. in a similar direction.”

1 J. Jeremias, παιδός Θεοῦ, in ThWKitel (Eng) V: 688-689.
2 R. Berechiah (c. 340), cf. Strack-Billerbeck I: 50f.
3 J. Jeremias, παιδός Θεοῦ, in ThWKitel (Eng) V: 698, n. 328a: “At all events the rapid replacement of the LXX by Aquila . . . shows that in the 2nd cent. the removal of unwanted texts was in fact a weapon in Judaism’s conflict with Christianity.”
4 C. Maurer, ὀλίζα, in ThWKitel (Eng) VI: 987: “Isaiah 53: 2 perhaps carries with it the Messianic sense of Is. 11: 10. . . . According to the traditional LXX text (ἀνγγελλα-μεν) the comparison with the shoot and the root does not relate to the figure of the Servant of the Lord but to proclamation concerning Him: ‘We proclaim in his presence as a child (proclaims), as a root pines in the dry ground.’ But there has probably been corruption in the Gk. and one may conjecture ἄνετειλε and construe like the Mas.: ‘He(sc. the Servant of the Lord) grew up before him (sc. Yahweh) like a child, like a shoot in the dry ground.’”
7 C. Maurer, ὀλίζα, in ThWKitel (Eng) VI: 986-987, for an excellent exegesis of the text and its relationship to Isaiah 53: 2.
8 E. Lohse, ὁδὸς Δαυίδ, in ThWKitel (Eng) VIII: 479, n. 2: “For the members of the Jewish community at Dura-Europos to see before them at the very right of the central
Marian Implications

(6) *Baruch 3*: 36-38 has been treated already within the textual study of Chrysostom.

(7) *Psalm 71*: 6: “He shall come down like rain upon the grass and like showers watering the earth.” Chrysostom’s text differs from the Septuagint in reading for 71: 6b σταγών ή στάζουσα in place of σταγόνες στάζουσα. This psalm may possibly be the one used for the liturgy on the day in which his homily was preached.¹

An example of Chrysostom’s rapid use of Scripture in presenting the soteriological purpose of the Incarnation is found in his introductory remarks to his homily on the birthday of Christ. He uses the texts of Matthew 13: 17 (“Many a prophet longed to see what you see . . . to hear what you hear”) and Baruch 3: 38 (God “was seen upon the earth through human flesh, and moved among men”), and then encourages the Christians to rejoice in their Savior (τὸν Σωτῆρα).²

An excellent example of Chrysostom’s theological reflection on the purpose of the Incarnation is brought out in his second homily on Matthew.³ What is significant is that he repeats the same phrase in his homily for the birthday of Christ;⁴ thus we have a perfect parallel to his thought. In his second homily on St. Matthew, he states that the Son of God was the Son of Abraham and the Son of David so that the sons of Adam might become future sons of God. He was born according to the flesh (Ἐγέννηθη γὰρ κατὰ σάρκα) that you might be born according to the spirit (ὅτα σὰ γεννήθης κατὰ πνεῦμα); born of a woman so that you might cease being born of a woman (Ἐγέννηθη ἐν γυναικώ); In being born of a woman he was similar to us; however, to be born neither of the blood, nor of the will of man and the flesh but of the Spirit—this announces our future birth of the Holy Spirit.

Torah Shrine of the House of Assembly a scene depicting the anointing of David, was inevitably a reminder of the divine promises concerning the Messianic king who was to come, the Lord’s Anointed himself, a “shoot out of the stock of Jesse” (Is. 11: 1) and a son of David. In all probability the scene received its prominent position in order to perform precisely this function.” (C. H. Kraeling, “The Synagogue,” *The Excavations at Dura-Europos*, VIII, 1 [1956] 168.)

² In Diem Natalem, PG 49: 351A.
³ In Matt., Hom. II, PG 57: 26A.
⁴ Ecloga 34, PG 63: 822D: Ἐγέννηθη τολύν κατὰ σάρκα, ἵνα γεννήθης κατὰ πνεῦμα Ἐγέννηθη ἐκ γυναικώς, ἵνα πάντας γυναικῶς ὄν νίς. (Underlining indicates the parallel to In Matt., Hom. II, i.e., PG 57: 26A.)
Chrysostom's biblical thought springs from the texts of Matthew and is explained by a parallel thought taken from the Prologue of John.\(^1\) What is new is his emphasis on the Holy Spirit within the soteriology of the Incarnation and, indirectly, a reflection on the virginity of Mary—the component of being born not according to flesh and blood or the will of man.

The homily on the birthday of Christ leads up to the completion of the Incarnation seen by Chrysostom's return to his favorite text, Baruch 3: 38.\(^2\) There are other modes also of expressing the soteriology of the Incarnation. At times, Chrysostom has more poetic descriptions which seem to wander away from the biblical texts.\(^3\)

**Davidic Lineage of Jesus—and Mary**

In the Fathers' choice of texts on the Incarnation, historical foundations are emphasized.\(^4\) This is evident in the important fact that Jesus was of the Davidic line. For the Greek Fathers the insistence on the Davidic line is an important part of the Messianic promise. Often in their homilies, the same Fathers try to illustrate that Mary, too, is from the lineage of David. John Chrysostom, as we will see, is no exception.

In his consecutive commentary on the Gospel of Matthew, Chrysostom at once refers to the descent of Jesus from David and Abraham, his ancestors. In doing this, Chrysostom is simply relying on Matthew's text, 1: 1. Matthew associates the name David with the confession of Jesus as the

---

\(^1\) Chrysostom does not use the text of John 1: 13 explicitly as an argument for the birth of Jesus from a Virgin. However, this text is quite close to such an interpretation, albeit in a transferred and implicit sense. We have seen that ancient witnesses (Irenaeus, Tertullian, Ambrose, Augustine and Pseudo-Athanasius) read John 1: 13 in the singular: "[He] who was born, not of blood nor of the will of the flesh nor of the will of man, but of God." All Greek manuscripts, as well as other versional and patristic witnesses, attest the plural. (Cf. B. Metzger, *op. cit.*, pp. 196-197 for the substance of these remarks.)

\(^2\) *Ecloga 34*, PG 63: 823D.

\(^3\) Cf. *Ecloga 34*, PG 63: 825A (more poetic) and *In Matt.*, *Hom. III*, PG 57: 34BC (a wandering description).

\(^4\) E. Lohse, *vòς Δαυίδ*, in ThWKöTTEL (Eng) VIII: 486, n. 52: "In stressing the title Son of David the Evangelist is not so much pursuing a historical concern (Strecker, *op. cit.*, 118-120); he rather 'emphasizes Jesus as the Son of David, in whom are fulfilled all legitimate Jewish Messianic hopes' (Gibbs, *op. cit.*, 463), and he is thus 'contending for the Messiahship of Jesus predominantly under the royal title of Son of David' ..." The Fathers are already speaking from a living tradition which emphasized the Davidic origins of Jesus. Thus the statement just made is not contradicted or dismissed by the above remark; rather it is complemented.
Marian Implications

Messiah of God's people. In him the promises are fulfilled in his earthly life. But it is the Christian community that will associate the name *Kurios* and Son of God (Mt. 22: 41-46) with Jesus, in whom all power is given both in the heavens and on the earth.¹

John Chrysostom states that among the Jews it is not the custom to give a genealogy through women—though in Matthew four women are mentioned in the genealogy; they are not totally exemplary, and serve another purpose.² His next step is to show that the title Son of David rather than Son of Abraham is what is being emphasized by the Evangelist Matthew.³ He uses John 7: 42 as a confirmatory text, and he cites the text accurately: "Does not the Messiah come from the seed of David and from Bethlehem from the village where David was?"

He continues to give his interpretation in this second homily on Matthew. "Why," he asks, "if Jesus was not truly born of Joseph's seed can he be said to be of David? How do we know the Virgin was of the line of David?" By means of a grammatical interpretation, Chrysostom clearly affirms Mary to be of the House of David (Luke 1: 27): "to a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house and family of David." Joseph, according to law, was to choose a wife from the same tribe.⁴ Being a just man, he not only chose a virgin, but also one from his own tribe: οὖν μᾶθωμεν τῆν Μαγδα... καὶ ἔδειξεν δυτα ἐκ τῆς οἰκίας Δαώδ.⁵

His reasoning about the origins of Jesus takes him back to a text which is also considered Messianic, namely, Genesis 49: 10. Chrysostom states, "The Patriarch Jacob also foretold that He should arise out of the tribe of Judah, saying in this manner: 'There shall not fail a ruler out of Judah, nor a governor out of his loins, until He would come for whom it is appointed, and He is the expectation of the Gentiles.'"⁶ This citation, Chrysostom says, "makes it clear that He was of the tribe of Judah." Chrysostom goes on to say that the Evangelist Matthew makes it evident that Jesus was also of the house and lineage of David, since it could not happen that one could be of the tribe of Judah, but not of the family of David.⁷

⁴ Ibid., PG 57: 27D.
⁵ Ibid., PG 57: 28D.
⁶ Ibid., PG 57: 28A.
⁷ Ibid., PG 57: 28B.
Chrysostom also alludes to a “mystical reason” why Mary’s genealogy is not traced, namely, that this fact was not to be made known to the Jews! Chrysostom avows he has taken this reason from the early Fathers—specifically he is referring to Ignatius of Antioch’s reference in his Epistle to the Ephesians XIX. Even the Virgin herself conceals this mystery.

After having confirmed Jesus’ genealogy to be Davidic through Joseph and Mary as well, Chrysostom cites Luke 2: 48: “Behold, thy father and I have sought thee.” This is done to protect the title Son of David; for that reason, only Joseph and Mary have been granted the revelation—even the apostles carefully refrain from saying too much about the origins of Jesus and his birth from a Virgin. It seems that Chrysostom is heavily indebted to the tradition started by Ignatius of Antioch; this notion has influenced his exegesis on this passage.

In his fourth homily, Chrysostom does a fine piece of exegesis in separating Matthew 1: 18 from the genealogy. In this respect, he is consonant with modern exegesis. He has his own intuitions about the reason for the transition in Matthew: “For as though he were about to speak of something unusual, he promises to tell the manner thereof.” The text cited in Chrysostom reads (Mt. 1: 18): τοῦ δὲ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ γέννησις οὗτως ἦν. The variants of significance read γένεσις which can also mean “creation,” “generation,” and “genealogy” (Mt. 1: 1); whereas the term used and cited by Chrysostom is more suited to his exegesis, for it emphasizes “engendering” and not the other meanings. It became the customary word used in Patristic literature to refer to the Nativity.

1 Ibid., PG 57: 31D. We have seen several other Fathers using the same tradition whose source is ultimately in Ignatius of Antioch, Ad Ephes. XIX (init.); Origen, Homilia VI in Lucam. Cf. ANF I: 57; SelectLibNicPNic X: 14, n. 1; C. Vona, “Il testo cristologico di S. Ignazio di Antiochia: Eph. 19, 1 nella tradizione di alcuni scrittori ecclesiastici,” Euntes Docete 9 (1956) 64-92.
2 Chrysostom’s text differs from the accepted critical text of today. His text reads: Ἰδοὺ δὲ γὰρ ὁ πατὴρ αὐτοῦ ἐξητιομέν εἰς. Contrast with Ἰδοὺ ὁ πατὴρ αὐτοῦ κἀγὼ δίδυμοι νοὺς ἐξητιομένε. He has omitted the element of Joseph and Mary’s anxiety and sorrow in searching for the Child Jesus.
3 In Matt., Hom. IV, PG 57: 41C.
4 B. Metzger, op. cit., p. 8: “In the present passage not only do the earlier representatives of several text-types support γένεσις, but the tendency of copyists would have been to substitute a word of more specialized meaning for one that had been used in a different sense in ver.1, particularly since γέννησις corresponds more nearly with the verb γεννᾶω used so frequently in the previous genealogy.” Cf. Lampe, p. 311 under γεννᾶω (to beget, engender). There are eight entries under Chrysostom: (1) Against Arians for whom this
Chrysostom’s keen eye has detected the purpose and technique of Matthew’s genealogy. He mentions that Matthew resumes what he began in speaking of the arrangement of the generations into three portions. What interests us in this technique (an inclusion) is that Chrysostom ends the passage with the indication that it was to David and Abraham that the promises were made.\textsuperscript{1} Salvation history is thus shown as factual through Davidic lineage and as soteriological through the overall purpose of Matthew’s genealogy.

In his homily on the birth of Christ, Chrysostom sets the stage for his interpretation of how Mary likewise is of the House of David by using texts referring to Bethlehem—Matthew 2: 1-2 and Luke 2: 4. He then uses the text of Luke 1: 26, 27 to affirm Mary, too, was of the house and lineage of David. The similarity of argument used in his commentary on St. Matthew’s Gospel helps confirm that this Nativity homily belongs to Chrysostom.\textsuperscript{2}

Chrysostom has also abbreviated the text of Luke 2: 4.\textsuperscript{3} He then leads us to the same argument presented in his commentary on Matthew that Mary was of the family of David. Chrysostom’s text differs slightly from the critical New Testament text. He omits the δὲ before τὸ μητρὶ; he reads ὅποιοι rather than ἀπό—due to a more refined Greek, using the preposition ὁπόθεν instead of the ἀπόθεν and its more archaic cognate relationship to ἀπεστάλη.

He also reads a perfect passive participle μετηναπετευμένην in place of the

\textsuperscript{1} In Matt., Hom. IV, PG 57: 41C: “Wherefore, that he was not acting without an object or by chance, when he distributed Christ’s forefathers into three portions, is plain from what has been said. And notice, too, whence he begins and where he ends. From Abraham to David; from David to the Babylonian Captivity; from this unto Christ Himself. For both at the beginning he put the two in close succession, David and Abraham, and also in summing up he mentions both (an inclusion) in the same way and this, because as I have already said, it was to them that the promises were made.”

\textsuperscript{2} In Diem Natalem, PG 49: 354CD.

\textsuperscript{3} Chrysostom has left out an entire phrase: ἐκ πόλεως Ναζαρέθ εἰς τὴν Ιουδαίαν εἰς πόλιν Δαυίδ ἡτοι καλεῖται βηθλέεμ.
aorist ἐμνηστευμένην. Then he explicitly gives his grammatical interpretation, saying that the expression ἐξ οἶκου Δαυίδ is said in reference to the Virgin as it is obviously clear.\(^1\) In the parallel to his second homily on Matthew’s Gospel, Chrysostom amplifies his text to say ἐξ οἶκος καὶ πατριᾶς Δαυίδ (“of the house and lineage of David”). He questions his audience: “What do you wish to be more clearly put than when you hear that the Virgin was of the house and lineage of David?”\(^2\)

5. Theodore of Mopsuestia

Theodore has emphasized the soteriological purpose of the Incarnation by focusing exclusively on Christ. There are no texts which explicitly refer to Mary’s role in this mystery. He does, however, clearly demonstrate from the Scriptures that her Son has lineage from David according to the flesh and the humble form of a slave.\(^3\) He likewise states that Jesus was born of the Virgin Mary as a man, according to the law of human nature, and was made of a woman.\(^4\) In another passage, he implies the importance of Jesus’ coming from the Davidic line; undoubtedly, because Mary then is the instrument for his human flesh and nature.\(^5\) A parallel to this thought is found in his instruction on the Nicene Creed which states that Jesus is fashioned from a

\(^1\) PG 49: 354D: περὶ τῆς παρθένου ὑποληπτέων εἰρήσθαι. The key word is ὑποληπτέων, which allows for Chrysostom’s making it his assumption or opinion that the antecedent refers to the Virgin and not Joseph.

\(^2\) His argument is put more forcefully for he uses Τῷ τοινυν βούλει τοῦτον σαφέστερον (more clearly).

\(^3\) Vigilius Papa, Constitutum . . . (GUNTHER, ed.), PG 86: 1059A: natum autem est ex Maria, qui ex semine est David.

\(^4\) A. Mingana, Commentary . . on the Nicene Creed, p. 67: “He was born of the Virgin Mary as a man, according to the law of human nature, and was made of woman. Indeed the Apostle said thus: ‘God sent forth His Son, made of a woman, made under the law, to redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.’” (Galatians 4: 4)

\(^5\) Theodore of Mopsuestia, Les Homelies Catéchetiques de Théodore de Mopsueste . . ., ed. by R. Tonneau and R. Devreese (Vatican City, 1949), Cat. Hom. VIII, pp. 209-211: “Quand en effet il est dit: Au sujet de son Fils qui fut de la descendance de David, en la chair, il est certain qu’ici le nom de Fils est donné à celui qui fut de la lignée de David par la chair, et non pas à Dieu le Verbe, mais à la forme d’esclave qui fut assumé. Ce n’est pas en effet que Dieu devint chair, ni non plus que Dieu devint de la lignée de David, mais cet homme qui fut assumé pour nous, c’est lui évidemment que le bienheureux Paul appelle Fils. Or nous le considérons comme Fils et lui en donnons le nom; non pas à lui simplement, mais pour la conjonction qu’il eut avec le Fils véritable.” (Italics for emphasis.)

360
woman without marital intercourse; He is from the nature of Mary and for this reason is said to be of the seed of David (Joseph is not mentioned).\textsuperscript{1}

Thus, Theodore's contribution to this section is in the verification of Scriptural evidence pointing to the Davidic origin of Jesus. He implicitly says that the Davidic line comes through Mary.

\section*{THE JERUSALEMITES}

\section*{6. St. Cyril of Jerusalem}

From a study of Cyril's three \textit{Catechetical Instructions on the Incarnation}, we have seen the Davidic lineage of the Messiah is greatly emphasized. There are but a few texts which concern the soteriological purpose of the Incarnation, aside from the Davidic texts seen in this context.

The names Jesus and Christ are explained as having a two-fold significance: Jesus, because he grants salvation; Christ, because he is anointed as priest.\textsuperscript{2} Cyril traces the name Jesus "through Auses" and then through the type, Jesus son of Nave (or Nun).\textsuperscript{3} For "Christ," he sees a type in Aaron who is anointed priest by Moses, his brother.

For the title "Savior," Cyril uses both the Old Testament—Isaiah 62: 11: "Behold, a Savior comes to you, his reward is with him" —and the New Testament—Matthew 1: 21: "She shall bear a son and you shall call his name Jesus for he shall save his people from their sins." He has prefaced this by saying that Jesus is interpreted among the Hebrews as Savior;\textsuperscript{4} among the Greeks, Savior means he who heals.\textsuperscript{5}

\textsuperscript{1} A. MINGANA, \textit{Commentary . . . on the Nicene Creed}, p. 67: "In this way we should also think about Christ our Lord. It was a novel thing to have been fashioned from a woman without marital intercourse, by the power of the Holy Spirit, but He is associated with the human nature by the fact that He is from the nature of Mary, and it is for this that He is said also to be the seed of David and Abraham, as in His nature He is related to them."

\textsuperscript{2} \textit{Catechesis X, De Uno Domino Jesu Christo}, PG 33: 676A.


\textsuperscript{4} \textit{Ibid.}, PG 33: 677A.

\textsuperscript{5} \textit{Ibid.}, PG 33: 677C. (Cf. the remarks made on healing in \textit{Amphiloctius of Iconium}.)
Though not directly based on a Scriptural text, the following words of Cyril are a biblical reflection on the life of Jesus as Savior and his birth of the Virgin:

The Savior passed nine months in the womb of the Virgin; but the Lord was a man for thirty-three years, so that if a Virgin rejoices because of the nine months, how much more so we because of the many years.¹

7. Hesychius of Jerusalem

In the two homilies chosen to represent Hesychius, care was taken to select those which were delivered before the Council of Ephesus.² Hesychius, thus, represents the latter part of the exegesis prior to that Council. The two works presented are closely related to the first two chapters of Luke’s Gospel. It is within his fidelity to that Evangelist’s context that Hesychius is speaking both in his II, De Hypapante and VI, De Sancta Maria Deipara.

First, Hesychius presents the two mysteries which center on the Incarnation in a soteriological framework. The first instance of this is his treatment of Anna as prophetess who, filled with the Spirit, announces salvation through the newlyborn (λόγαροσιν διὰ τοῦ βρέφος κατήγγειλεν).³ He has carefully set his thought within the principal text for his homily, Luke 2: 26-38, the center pericope of the Presentation of Jesus in the Temple. All of his interpretation recognizes the impelling initiative of the Holy Spirit within Simeon, Joseph and Mary, and Anna. The setting is perfect for the liturgical celebration of God’s proclaimed word on the occasion of the Hypapante.

The homily entitled VI, De Sancta Maria Deipara, closely follows the Gospel of Luke. In fact, Hesychius is attentive to Lukan soteriology in using a phrase from the same Gospel to have Gabriel explain his message to

¹ Catechesis XII, PG 33: 768A.
³ Ibid., II, De Hypapante: 1: 1-2, p. 62. (For an excellent excursus by Fr. AUBINEAU on the mystery of salvation, see ibid., pp. 50-52; references are to II, De Hypapante: II: 7: 8 and 8: 10; II: 6: 5 and 7: 3; II: 15: 11; II: 7: 1, 6; II: 7: 8; II: 7: 10; II: 7: 11-13; II: 9: 11; II: 9: 12-13; II: 10: 8; II: 9: 11; II: 9: 13-15; II: 10: 9; II: 10: 9-11.) The term βρέφος is used eight times within the N.T., six times by Luke-Acts, and four times within the first two chapters of Luke’s Gospel.
Marian Implications

Mary; Jesus is announced as “a savior of those who were lost.” Hesychius, as a Jerusalemite, remains close to the Scripture, almost paraphrasing it in order to interpret it.


He calls the Incarnation a “mystery of salvation” which is hidden from the one who lies in wait for his prey.

Secondly, the soteriological purpose is seen through the promises within prophecy and their fulfillment in the mystery of the Incarnation. This is magnificently presented in the last two sections of his sixth homily, De Sancta Maria Deipara. He presents an orchestration of the favored texts for the Incarnation and challenges the unbeliever to pay attention to what is being fulfilled in the history of salvation. Twelve citations from the Old Testament are presented as promises from the Lord through his prophets, ten of which are given in this section; they are fulfilled in Christ. All of the texts are used as promise-fulfillment texts:

1) Deuteronomy 18:15: The Lord God will raise up a prophet for you from among your brethren like unto me; listen to him (προφήτην ὑμῖν ἀναστήσει χύριος ὁ Θεός, ἐκ τῶν ἄδελφῶν ὑμῶν ὁς ἐμὲ ἁπτόταν ἄκούσετε).

Hesychius has taken the text and used the plural ὑμῖν for σοι, omitted the σον after ὁ Θεός, reversed the phrases, changed σον to ὑμῖν after

2 Ibid., Hom. II: 7: 1, p. 66.
3 Ibid., 7: 1, 6, p. 66.
4 Ibid., 7: 4, p. 66.
5 Ibid., 7: 8, p. 66.
7 HESYCHIUS (AUBINEAU, ed.), op. cit., Hom. II: 7: 8-9, p. 66 and 8: 10, p. 68.
8 Ibid., 69, n. 1; cf. Chap. III, p. 300, n. 1.
9 HESYCHIUS (AUBINEAU, ed.), op. cit., pp. 175-176, where the twelve texts are presented: Deut. 18: 15; Is. 7: 14; Bar. 3: 36; Bar. 3: 38; Zach. 6: 12; Mal. 3: 20; Ezek. 44: 2-3; Dan. 7: 13; Gen. 49: 10; Ps. 86: 5; Ps. 71: 7; Ps. 71: 8.
Greek Patristic Exegesis (4th C.)

...and used the future active ἁκούσετε in place of the future middle ἁκούσεσθε.¹ The plural emphasizes the members of the community (which now Hesychius regards as the Christian community), while the original text envisioned only Israel as a corporate unity.

The text is Messianic and may have been from a Palestinian tradition that the Messiah will be the prophet of Deuteronomy 18: 15, 18.² In fact, the paucity of rabbinic examples may have been due to its being expunged because of the welcome the text received in Christianity.³ Hesychius, as a Jerusalemite, naturally would be interested in this text. In the homilies studied, he alone uses it. It also fits the Christian tradition behind the Transfiguration wherein Elijah appears as the harbinger and Moses as the immediate forerunner of the Messiah.⁴ Both as a Jerusalemite who knew the Hebrew tradition and as a Greek-speaking preacher and exegete, Hesychius may well be aware that the phrase in Deuteronomy can mean "to cause [someone] to be born" or to cause him to appear in history,⁵ thereby giving even more force to the promise-fulfillment theme expressed in this text.

Just as Matthew’s Gospel has presented Jesus as a new Moses, so, too, Hesychius may see Jesus as an anti-type of Moses, a suffering mediator who fasts for forty days, wrestles with God, and dies outside the promised land just as Jesus dies outside the walls of the city.⁶

Despite the importance of this text for the Samaritans—they added it to the tenth commandment and considered it Messianic—Hesychius is depending on the tradition as he found it in Christianity and not upon anyone in particular. One would have expected it to have been used Messianically by Justin Martyr, who rather allegorizes Moses as a moral example.⁷

² J. Schniewind, ἀπαγγέλλω, in ThWKittel (Eng) I: 87.
³ Ibid., p. 67, n. 26, citing a reference to Strack-Billerbeck II: 479ff., 626; IV: 452ff. on Ps. 110; IV: 1223, Index s.v. Elias, etc.
⁴ J. Jeremias, Ἡράκλατς, in ThWKittel (Eng) II: 938, esp. n. 81.
⁵ Idem, ἄλθος, in ThWKittel (Eng) IV: 270, esp. n. 19.
⁶ A. Oepke, μεστίς, in ThWKittel (Eng) IV: 612; (Cf. J. Jeremias, Μωυσῆς, in ThWKittel [Eng] IV: 860-862, for examples from rabbinic literature and from Josephus referring to Messiah in likeness of Moses as prototype. For a quick survey of the question of whether Deut. 18: 15, 18 is Messianic during the time of Christ, cf. ibid., p. 858, n. 125. Also, cf. G. Friedrich, προφήτης, in ThWKittel [Eng] VI: 846-847.)
⁷ J. Jeremias, Μωυσῆς, in ThWKittel (Eng) IV: 858, n. 126 and 873, n. 257 (Justin, Dial. 90). However, see Barnabas 6: 8 (ibid., p. 865, n. 199); Deuteronomy 18: 15-19 was
Marian Implications

Hesychius, who has relied so closely on Luke’s Gospel within this homily, may also associate the redemptive power of Jesus’ birth with Deuteronomy 18: 15; even though Moses is never called λόγοςοις in the Septuagint, he is in Acts 7: 25, with an apparent parallel to Jesus. The word has a Messianic ring in Luke 24: 21 and λόγοςοις in 1: 68 and 2: 38. We have seen Hesychius’ fondness for this word.

Unfortunately, Hesychius does not come back to this text in his Homily on Stephen wherein the crucial text of Acts 7: 37 is omitted. In this text, a promise of a prophet like Moses was fulfilled in Jesus, and Moses is a prototype of Jesus in his sufferings.

2) Isaiah 7: 14⁴: Behold a Virgin shall conceive, and bear a son and his name shall be called Emmanuel. (We have already seen this text in combination with use of Baruch 3: 36, 38.)

3) Baruch 3: 36, 38⁵: This is our God, and there shall be no other like unto him . . . afterwards he was seen upon earth, and conversed with men.

4) Zechariah 6: 12⁶: Behold a man whose name is Orient.

Hesychius’ text is the same as the Septuagint reading. The Hebrew text suggests the reading of Shoot or Branch רַֹּפְּאָ (šemah) for ἀνατολή in the Septuagint. The term ἀνατέλλειν is a translation of the substantive šemah (“to sprout”) and zrah (“to arise”). In connection with Jeremiah 23: 5, Zechariah 3: 8 and our present text, a form of ἀνα τέλλειν is used to translate the former (šemah), whereas in the Messianic text of Numbers 24: 17, it is zrah or daraḥ. The latter refers to the Messiah. The two meanings merge and it is difficult to make precise what the meaning is.⁷

the locus classicus for the Messianic expectation of the Samaritans. (Cf. A. Merx, “Der Messias oder ta’eb d. Samaritaner,” Zeitschrift für die alttestamentliche Wissenschaft Beth. 17 (1909) 43.

¹ Ibid., p. 868, n. 226.
⁵ Ibid., II. 9, 10-11, p. 202.
⁷ H. SCHLIER, ἀνατέλλω, ἀνατολή, in ThWKITTTEL (Eng) I: 352: “Elsewhere, however, it is more in keeping with Christian usage to render ‘arise’ or ‘shine forth’ in relation to Christ: 2 Pt. 1: 19; Ign. Mg., 9, 1: ἐν ἡ (sc. ἡμέρα) καὶ ἦ ἡμῶν (Christ = our life) ἀνέεσθεν δι’ αὐτοῦ καὶ τοῦ Θεοῦ αὐτοῦ. Like Christ and the sun, the martyr, too, rises up to God. (Ign. R., 2, 2).”
It is a name for the Messiah in the Synagogue and may mean a “star shining from heaven”; thus the relationship to the text from Numbers 24: 17 is seen—“a star shall rise out of Jacob.”

5) Malachi 3: 20: *He will arise . . . a sun of justice, and healing is in his wings.*

Since the biblical background of the text has already been commented upon under Amphilochius,² I shall refer only to the text as found in Hesychius. The text is in perfect agreement with the Septuagint.³ The context within the homily follows the overall pattern of promise and fulfillment as is characteristic for all twelve biblical citations used in the conclusion of his homily. Aubineau has been able to restore the text through noticing the twin citations of Zechariah 6: 12 and Malachi 3: 20.⁴ This is a very helpful contribution for biblical scholars.

¹ *Ibid.* p. 353: “We might also refer to the exposition of Zech. 6: 12 in Justin and Melito. Justin always understands the ἀνατάλητος of Zech. 6: 12 (Dial. 100, 4; 106, 4; 121, 2; 126, 1) in terms of ἀνατέλλων of LXX Nu. 24: 17, so that for him the advent of Christ is the rising of a star. And Melito construes Lk. 1: 78 as follows: καὶ μόνος οὖν ἀνέτειλεν ἄξον οὐρανοῦ. The visitation of the mercy of God has come with the dawn of heavenly light in the Messiah Christ as the sun of the world.”

Also, for the name of the Messiah (cf. C. MAURER, ὄζων, in ThWKITTTEL [Eng] VI: 988: “The idea that the Messiah is the root of Jesse is common in the Synagogue. In this connection Ἰηωσῆς [sōres] is always related to the descendant of Jesse in the sense of shoot, Tg. Pro. Is. on 11: 1, . . . This is supported by the general replacement of Ἰηωσῆς [sōres] by the unequivocal Ἰησοῦς [semah] “shoot,” Tg. Pro. Jer. on 23: 5; 33: 15; Zech. 3: 8; 6: 12.”


From n. 6, p. 178: “On trouvera une citation isolée . . . de Mal. 3, 20 dans l’Hom. in Psalmum 96, 11 (PG 55: 777, lin. 8 ab imo).”

From p. 192: “On verra comment, en 7, 12-13, reprenant une suggestion de Picot, mais l’exploitant plus complètement, nous avons restitué dans le texte un verset entier de Mal. 3, 20, qui avait disparu par une sorte de ‘saut du même au même’ (ἄνατολή/ἀνατέλλει): ce qui disculpe Hésychius d’avoir cité, sous le nom de Zacharie, un fragment de Malachie.”

366
Hesychius, in using the citation further than Amphilochius, that is, including the phrase "and healing is in his wings (rays)," is able to have the fulfillment of the text seen in the healing power of Jesus as he cures the woman "who had suffered from hemorrhages many years."

6) **Ezekiel 44: 2-3:** *The Lord will enter and leave by her, and the door shall remain closed.*

We have seen that Amphilochius in his *Oration II, De Hypapante,* has used this same citation of Ezekiel. Hesychius is abbreviating the text in passing—giving only a few words from the two verses in Ezekiel.

7) **Daniel 7: 13:** *I was looking and behold there came upon the clouds of the heaven, one like to a son of man.*

His text closely parallels the Septuagint except for his leaving aside—ἐν δράματι τῆς νυκτὸς and his changing into the participle ἔχομενος what was ἔσχετο in the Septuagint. It is striking that this text which was so prominent in Mark's Gospel (especially Chapter 14) is used rarely in the homiletics of the fourth and fifth centuries. Amphilochius, as we have seen, may have implicitly referred to it. This is the only explicit citation of it in the works expressly studied. It is definitely a Messianic reference. Sometimes Daniel 7: 13 was contrasted with Zechariah 9: 9. On the basis of

---

2 *AMPHILOCHIUS (DATEMA, ed.), op. cit., Or. II. In Occursum Domini: 3, 11. 74-75, p. 45,* applies the text to the virginal womb of Mary. (Cf. R. CANO, *op. cit., MLS 3* [1971] 81, 90, has cited Proclus [PG 75: 692A] for using the text of Ezekiel 44: 1-2: "Illustra finalmente su creencia, con el conocido testo de Ezequiel 44, 2 en que se identifica a Marfa con la puerta cerrada a través de la cual solamente pasará el Señor Dios de Israel quien la cerrará a su salida" [p. 99].)
3 Hesychius has only the following from the Septuagint: Ἡ πόλη αὕτη κεκλεισμένη ἢσται, οὖν ἀνοικήσεται καὶ οὗδεις μὴ διέλθῃ δι' αὐτῆς, δῆτι κύριος ὁ Θεός τοῦ Ἰσραήλ εἰσελθεῖσαι δι' αὐτῆς, καὶ ἢσται κεκλεισμένη. . . εἴσελθεται (v. 4). He has reversed the word order, picking and choosing from Ezek. 44: 2-4.
6 O. MICHEL, ἵππος, in ThWKittel (Eng) III: 337, n. 8: "Cf. bSanh., 98a: R. Alexandrel (c. 270) has said: R. Jehoshua b. Levi (c. 250) brought into contrast Da. 7: 13: 'Lo, there came with the clouds of heaven one like a son of man,' and Zech. 9: 9: 'Poor and riding on an ass.' If they (Israel) have merits (are worthy), he comes with the clouds of heaven;
Daniel 7: 13. It is often maintained that the Messiah will come with the clouds of the heavens.1 The text fits in well with salvation history for it indicates that the goal and end of history is the establishment of God’s rule.2

A parallel to such Messianic thought can be seen in Justin’s Dialogue with Trypho. Hesychius could have been aware of Justin’s ideas.3 An excellent summary of the Son of Man and its relationship to the human nature of Christ as found in Ignatius, Barnabas, Justin, Irenaeus and Tertullian is found in Colpe’s development of the biblical notion of the son of man.4

8) Genesis 49: 10: The sceptre shall not be taken away from Juda, nor a ruler from his thigh, till he come that is to be sent, and he shall be the expectation of nations.

We have seen the general biblical background for this verse already. Hesychius has but one change in his text from that of the Septuagint; his text reads: δὲ ἀπόκοκται in place of τὰ ἀποκελμένα αὐτῷ. We have seen that his reading corresponds with that of John Chrysostom, hence, a text which was slightly different from our reading of the critical edition of the Septuagint text. (See table for biblical references.) The context of Hesychius’ use is once again a familiar orchestration of promise-fulfillment texts or testimonia.

if they have no merits, he comes poor and riding on an ass.” (Cf. C. Schneider, κάθημαι, in ThWKITTEL [Eng] III: 442.)

1 A. Œpke, νεφέλη, in ThWKITTEL (Eng) IV: 909. Cf. where Matthew follows the Septuagint more closely than Mark 14: 62. Mt. 26: 64: ἐκτὸς τῶν νεφελῶν τοῦ θυράνθου is not in Luke. Hesychius would be closer to Matthew than Mark who is rarely used in the Fathers of this period of time, incl. 350-430 A.D.


3 C. Colpe, ὁ νίκος τοῦ ἀνθρώπου, in ThWKITTEL (Eng) VIII: 430: “On the other hand Judaism, which apart from Da. 7: 27 always interpreted the מָצַח בֵּר [bar endsh] of Da. 7: 13 f. messianically, retained all the characteristics of the Son of Man, though His name was changed, usually to בֵּן נֶפֶלְי [ben nephiti] or Son of the clouds, or else it was quoted in the original context and implicitly related to the Messiah. Trypho in Just. Dial., 32, 1 recognised that a glorious and powerful Messiah will come acc. to Da. 7: 13, though he denies that He was come in Christ crucified or that Christ will come again. He thus bears witness to a messianic interpretation of Da. 7: 13 f. independent of the Chr. one . . .” (Cf. Justin, Dial. 14: 8; 31: 1, 3; 120: 4.)

4 Ibid., pp. 476-477.

5 Hesychius (Aubineau, ed.), op. cit., Hom. VI: 8: 2-4, p. 204.
9) Psalm 86: 5 (Heb: 87: 5): Sion is a mother, a man will say; and a man has been engendered in her, and the Most High himself has established her.1

Hesychius’ text has but one difference from that of the Septuagint. He reads ἐγεννηθή in place of ἐγεννηθή. This may indicate that he directs his attention to the birth of Jesus from Mary rather than a more general notion of being engendered. It would follow; for his immediate application is to the Mother/Virgin: “Indeed the Mother has remained a Virgin even after giving birth, preserving unharmed the seal of virginity which nature had bestowed.”2 It also could show a theme of Mary as prefigured in Sion; if so, this would take the place of a theme of Davidic lineage which is developed more fully and explicitly in Cyril of Jerusalem, but rarely in Hesychius.3

The theme Mary-Sion is only present in Hesychius among the Fathers studied. The present Psalm and its application to her is the principal text for helping us to see his understanding of Mary in relationship to Sion. Aubineau has seen the relationship of Sion to Mary and possibly to the place where the liturgy and word of God is preached.4

The Psalm has the word mother only in the Greek version. The Hebrew text only mentions Sion. Interestingly, the Jerusalem Bible maintains the Septuagint reading: “But all call Zion ‘mother,’ since all were born in her.”5 Caro sees the relationship between Mary and Jerusalem (Sion) and probes with a question whether the typology between Mary and Church is also indicated.6

---

1 Ibid., ll. 5:7, p. 204.
2 Ibid., ll. 7-9, p. 204.
3 I have found but one direct reference to Davidic lineage in Hesychius, and, even here, Hesychius applies the text to Mary’s virginity. Cf. ibid., Hom. V, De Sancta Maria Deipara: 2: 3, p. 160: Καὶ δὲ μὲν σὺ ὁ Ἱεροσαλήμ καλεῖ, ίνα τὸ ἄγγελον καὶ ἀκαμπτῆς τῆς παρθένης αἰνεῖται (Cf. Isaiah 11: 1.). This is more consonant with Hesychius’ pattern to view David as a psalmist and prophetic voice rather than the ancestor of Jesus.
5 JB, p. 871, Psalm 87: 5.
6 R. Caro, op. cit., MLS 3 (1971) 45.
There are problems with both the Hebrew¹ and Septuagintal texts² which may account for the varied interpretations. However, within a tradition even these “mistakes” often lead to remarkable and creative intuitions. Yet, modern interpreters would concede Hesychius’ insight is accurate.³ Rabbinic interpretation permits our seeing redemption by the Messiah within this Psalm.⁴ In later writings Σιὼν or Jerusalem is applied to the Church.⁵

10) Psalm 71: 7-8: Justice will arise in his days. He will rule from sea to sea and from the rivers to the ends of the inhabited earth.⁶

Hesychius cites these verses of the psalm directly from the Septuagint; there is but one difference, the use of the plural ἀπὸ ποταμοῦν instead of the Septuagint ἀπὸ ποταμοῦ. The Psalm is considered Messianic by commentators and in the Targum.⁷ Both the Hebrew text and the Septuagint read “River” (singular).⁸

---

² W. Michaelis, μήτης, in ThWKittel (Eng) IV: 642, n. 7: “ψ 86: 5: μήτης Σιὼν is a scribal error (Rahlfs μη της, Schleusner, III, 557μητ). Cf. also Jer. 15: 8. For non-biblical examples of this use cf. Liddell-Scott s.v. Cf. also Str.-B., III, 574.”
³ G. Förher, Σιὼν, in ThWKittel (Eng) VII: 316: “Thus everyone finds his spiritual home in Jerusalem no matter where he was born, Ps. 87: 5. By acknowledgment of Yahweh the other peoples become members of the people of God.”
⁴ A. S. Van der Woode, Χριστός, in ThWKittel (Eng) IX: 526 (Mdr. Ps., 87,6 on 87: 5).
⁵ E. Löhrse, Σιὼν, in ThWKittel (Eng) VII: 338: “Jerusalem ‘is the Church, for the city of God is the Church, the vision of peace (δρας εἰρήνης),’ Orig. Hom. in Jer., 9 on Jer. 11: 2.” Also: “The Ophites contrasted Jerusalem in the height, which is the mother of all living creatures, with Egypt as τὴν κάτω μίξιν.”
⁶ Hesychius (Aubineau, ed.), *op. cit.*, Hom. VI: 8: 9-11, p. 204.
⁸ R. Rengstorf, Ἰοσδάνης, in ThWKittel (Eng) VI: 610: “Alongside the purely geographical and political evaluation of the Jordan there is another which is controlled by the concept of the land of Israel as depicted in the divine promise to the patriarch Abraham. Here in the framework of a theological eschatological view the Jordan is part of the land and not its frontier. The eastern frontier is the Euphrates and the river of Egypt borders it to the South. As one would expect, this way of looking at things is esp. in scribal circles and comes to expression in religio-legal judgments, esp. those which group the territory on the far side of Jordan with Judaea and Galilee.” Also, n. 28: “Cf. esp. Gn. 15: 18, but also Ex. 23: 31; Dt. 1: 7; 11: 24; Jos. 1: 4; Is. 27: 12; Mi. 7: 12; Zech. 9: 10; Ps. 72: 8.” (Italics added).
PART III. TYPOLOGY:

PARALLELISM OF: ADAM/CHRIST—EVE/MARY

The beginnings of a comparison of Christ with Adam are found within St. Paul, the earliest New Testament writer. Luke, too, in his genealogy, states that Jesus is the "son of Adam, the son of God" (Luke 3: 38). Both Paul and Luke had the Genesis account of Adam in mind when referring to Jesus and Adam; the two chapters of Genesis 2 and 3 belong to the Yahwist tradition.1 It is from this general biblical context that the antithesis between the first Adam and the second Adam emerges in the writings of Justin and Irenaeus; both are ultimately dependent on the sources of Genesis, Luke, and the letters of Paul for the materials which led them to a parallel of Adam/Christ and a contrast of Mary/Eve or Church/Eve.2 In the fourth and fifth centuries, the Fathers were dependent for their development of these themes and types on both the biblical sources and the tradition Justin and Irenaeus had begun.3

The parallel of Adam/Christ, Eve/Mary has been described as fitting into the overall plan of God, that is, into salvation history by both Söll

1 See DieBibITh, pp. 6-7, under Adam; Michel Join-Lambert and Xavier Léon-Dufour have presented the biblical data in a clear succinct fashion.

2 G. Söll, Mariologie. Handbuch der Dogmengeschichte, Band III, Fas. 4 (Herder: 1978), p. 34: "Ohne Vorgriff auf spätere Erweiterungen und Reflexionen ergibt sich aus dieser Eva-Maria-Parallele, die Paulus für Adam-Christus vorgebildet (Röm 5, 14; I Kor 15, 22 45) und Ignatius gedanklich vorbereitet hatte, dass Justin Maria bewusst in der Heilsgeschichte verankerte und damit zugleich die von der Ostkirche besonders entfaltete inkarnatorische Soteriologie bestätigte, die besagt: Die Erlösung begann mit der Menschwerdung, und Maria hat hier einen unverdrängbaren Platz.


3 Ibid., p. 41, and p. 47: "Das von Lukas gezeichnete Marienbild war durch die Eva-Maria-Parallele eines Justin und Irenäus bereichert worden."

p. 35: "...versuchte Irenäus die beiden Testamente auch dadurch innerlich zu verbinden, dass er die Schöpfungsordnung mit der Erlösungsordnung als Einheit der göttlichen Heilsveranstaltung herausstellte und Christus schon im Alten Bund vorgezeichnet sah."
and Congar. M.-J. Nicolas has also seen this plan in his identifying the parallel typology with the theme of recapitulation already found in Irenaeus. Since the biblical principles of Justin and Irenaeus have been presented in the survey of chapter one, some of the same Scriptural texts used by the Fathers are now the object of study. Only those texts from Genesis 2 and 3 and the Pauline texts used by the Fathers are presented.

THE CAPPADOCIANS

1. Amphilochius of Iconium

**Genesis 3: 16:** I will multiply thy sorrows and thy conception: in sorrow shalt thou bring forth children and thou shalt be under thy husband's power and he shall have dominion over thee.

The text is exactly cited from the Septuagint without any variants. Amphilochius has used the text to praise virginity which he sees as beginning with the angels. He lauds virginity as victory and freedom from the curse which had been brought upon Eve. The text of Genesis 3: 16 corroborates the fate of Eve, while Amphilochius has a progression of ideas for virginity from a cosmic victory (τὸν κόσμον νικῶσα) to the spiritual victory (τὰ πάθη πατοῦσα), breaking with Eve (the fallen virgin) (τῇ Ἐδίκῃ κοινωνοῦσα), as a state free from sadness (λύπης ἀπελλαγμένη), redeemed from

2 M.-J. Nicolas, "Introduction théologique à des études sur la Nouvelle Ève," BEM 12 (1954) 7: "La théorie de la ‘Récapitulation’ dans saint Irénée devra donc être analysée dans sa profondeur, pour que nous nous rendions compte si elle implique aussi fortement une Nouvelle Ève, réparatrice de la première, qu’un Nouvel Adam... La Nouvelle Ève met forcément en cause le Décret de l’Incarnation, ses rapports avec le Décret de la Création."
3 Amphilochius (Datema, ed.), op. cit., Or. II. In Occursum Domini: 1, 11. 10-12, p. 37: Πληθύνων πληθύνω τὸς λόπας σου καὶ τῶν στεναγμῶν σου' ἐν λόπαις τέξη τέκνα καὶ πάντων τῶν ἄνθρωπων σου καὶ ἀνθρώπων καὶ ἀνθρώπων καὶ σου κυρίεσθε.
4 Ibid., l. 2: ὃς τῶν ἀγγέλων σώματος.
5 Ibid., 1. 6-7.
6 Ibid., l. 7.
7 Ibid., 1. 7-8.
8 Ibid., l. 8.
groans (στέναγμῶν λευτρωμένη—perfect participle indicating those completely redeemed). The latter statements are seen as indications of a positive nature contrasted with the original maledictions made upon Eve; through virginity a perfectly achieved purity is brought about (Ἁγνέλας ἐπειλημμένη), and the state of virginity does not take up the sentence of condemnation (μὴ προσδεχομένη τὴν φάσκουσαν). Therefore, virginity is "unenslaved property" (ὡς ἀδούλωτον κτῆμα) and is a free dwelling place (ὡς ἐλεύθερον ἐνδιαίτημα). Amphilocheius then uses words which analyze this freedom from the curse; it is a new, more spiritual condition, a laborious ascetic ornament (ὡς τῆς ἀνθρωπινῆς ἐξως ἀνωτέρα) freeing one from sufferings in time of necessity (ὡς τῶν ἐπὶ ἀνάγκας παθῶν ἀπολυθεῖσα). He then addresses his audience of virgins with an eschatological praise showing virginity as bridal union with Christ in the heavenly nuptial bed of the kingdom. Amphilocheius has sandwiched the text of Genesis 3: 16 between the heavenly, cosmic and spiritual aspects of virginity and, after the citation of the text, with freedom, spiritual liberty and heavenly union.

He then addresses the married with praises, showing (in Cappadocian style) the wedded state as the source for virgins. Marriage thus is complementary to the state of virginity; there is no negative innuendo.

This is his introduction to the mystery of Jesus (Luke 2: 21-23) and more specifically Genesis 4: 8:

When the eighth day arrived for his circumcision, the name Jesus was given to the Child, the name the angel had given him before he was conceived. When the day came to purify them according to the law of Moses, the couple brought him up to the temple so that he could be presented to the Lord as it is written in the law of the Lord, every first born male shall be called holy to the Lord.
Conclusion:

Genesis 3: 16 as used by Amphilochius does not directly set up a parallel with Eve/Mary. It is more a parallel of Eve/a virgin (who brings about malediction, sorrow, and constraint) and virginity as a choice which leads to joy, freedom, and blessing. The first mention of Mary is some several paragraphs later when the text of Luke 1: 35 mentions Gabriel speaking to the Virgin. Jouassard has pointed out that the Eve/Mary cycle in Justin is based on the virginity theme, while the contrasts between Mary/Eve are the interests of Irenaeus.¹ In Amphilochius, the parallel is not explicit; Mary is not even mentioned. Therefore, the Christian state of virginity is what is contrasted with Eve. If we push for the entire context and allow for the later mention of the Virgin Mary, then Amphilochius would be closer to the cycle of Justin.

In Oratio I, In Natalitia Domini, Amphilochius uses the theme of freedom achieved through a virgin while subjugation to sin comes from the first virgin, but there is no direct citation of a biblical text from Genesis 3. The allusion is implicitly Genesis 3: 15, but both Datema in his critical edition² and Laurentin³ do not affirm the text was used. Amphilochius' context is that of salvation history alluding to the fact that the Incarnation took place because the Master is being born of a virgin and is thus becoming similar to the servants in order that they might become more similar to God. The allusion is close to the Christ hymn of Philippians 2: 6.⁴

¹ G. Jouassard, “La nouvelle Ève . . . ,” p. 51: “Nous sommes loin apparemment de savoir tout ce qui s’est écrit à son sujet; dans ce que nous atteignons il se manifeste deux tendances principales: l’une qui pousse à montrer ce qui rapproche Marie d’Ève, la virginité; l’autre, ce qui les oppose toutes deux. La première tendance est représentée par le Dialogue avec Tryphon et Tertullien; la seconde par saint Irénée et à peu près uniquement par lui, en définitive, bien qu’il y ait des amorces dans le Dialogue et qu’il reste un organe-témoin chez Tertullien.”

² AMPHILOCHIUS (DATEMA, ed.), op. cit., cf. critical apparatus for biblical references.


⁴ AMPHILOCHIUS (DATEMA, ed.), op. cit., Or. I: 4, II. 108-112, p. 8: (my translation) “The world is freed through a Virgin, which, formerly through a virgin, fell under the power of sin. Through a virginal birth so great and so many an invisible horde of demons was destroyed. The Master became conformed to [His] servants, in order that the servants would again be conformed to God.”
Genesis 3: 18: Thorns and thistles shall the earth bring forth.

Amphilochius uses this text in the overall context of salvation history effected through Christ and through Mary's overcoming the blunder of Eve.¹ His Oratio VII is an address to those recently baptized. The biblical allusions are well chosen. It is the text of Genesis 3: 18, "Thorns and thistles shall the earth bring forth for you," which is read in the pattern of Mary/Eve, Adam/Christ contrasts. This curse is removed because of Christ. Here Amphilochius is closer to the cycle of Mary/Eve in Irenaeus. Here is the translation of the significant lines:

No longer does Eve fear the reproach of Adam, for indeed in Mary the blunder of the former is revoked; no longer does Adam fear the serpent, for Christ has crushed the head of the dragon. "For you," he says, "smashed the head of the dragon upon the water," that is upon the one baptized.²

The allusion is not to Genesis 3: 15 but to Psalm 73: 13.

Virgin Earth: Adam/Christ

A final parallel is found in De Abraham in which Adam is a symbol for Christ: "For Adam is a symbol of him, [Adam] who has come forth out of a virginal earth, in the same way as God, the Christ."³ The same idea has an exact parallel in Amphilochius' Homily VI, In Illud: Pater si possibile est.⁴

The notion is a commonplace one among the Fathers; E. M. Llopart, in his study of Mary and the Church in the pre-Ephesus thought of the Fathers, cites all of its uses.⁵

2. St. Basil

Genesis 3: 19: For dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return.

The verse cited is found in his homily on the birth of Christ.⁶ The theophany or revelation of Christ becoming flesh reverses this malediction. To-

¹ Ibid., Or. VII, De Recens Baptizatis: 4, ll. 100-109, pp. 158-159.
² Ibid., ll. 100-104.
³ Ibid., De Abraham, ll. 378-379, p. 300.
⁴ Ibid., Or. VI: 7, ll. 138-139, ll. 141-145 (p. 144).
⁵ E. M. LLOPART, "María y la Iglesia en los Padres Preefesinos," in Maria-Ecclesia Regina et Mirabilis, p. 36, n. 62.
⁶ Homilia in Sanctam Christi Generationem, PG 31: 1473A.
day, Christ’s Birthday, is the liberation of Adam’s multitude (Σήμερον ἐλών ἧ ἀναδίκη τοῦ Ἁδήμ.). The verse is parallel to what follows.

**Genesis 3: 16: In pain thou shalt bring forth children.**

“This phrase will no longer be heard because blessed is she who has borne Emmanuel, and blessed her breasts which nourished him.”¹ Mary is seen as a benediction reversing the malediction of Eve to whom those lines were first addressed.

3. Gregory of Nyssa

**Genesis 3: 15: He shall crush thy head.**

In Gregory’s Christmas homily, the text of Genesis 3: 15 is implicit. The author says, “Then, having put on human flesh, he crushed with his foot the many heads of the serpent who, falling to the ground, he tread upon it.”² What is of interest is that the gender is correctly attributed to the masculine pronoun—“He shall crush thy head”—as the Hebrew indicates.³ This homily would fit Laurentin’s schema of a Christological interpretation of Genesis 3: 15, that is, it is Christ who crushes the head of the serpent.⁴ Since the text is not explicit, Laurentin has not cited the homily.

**Genesis 3: 16: In pain shalt thou bear children.⁵**

In the same homily, the author contrasts the malediction of Genesis 3: 16 with the joy and gladness which the words “Hail, full of grace, the Lord is with thee” bring to the Virgin. Though neither Mary nor Eve is explicitly referred to, the context indicates they are understood. Such a contrast fits more the pattern of Irenaeus than Justin, if we would reflect on the possible tradition-source.⁶

There is a final section of the same homily which has the pattern of a first woman contrasted with another woman; the first man contrasted with

¹ *Ibid.*, ll. 8-10.
² *In Diem Natalem Christi*, PG 46: 1132C.
⁵ *In Diem Natalem Christi*, PG 46: 1140C.
the second. Since the thoughts are conflated from Romans 5: 12 and Genesis 3: 15, we mention their appearance. Death occurs because of the first man; the second brings salvation. The first has fallen through sin; the second has risen. The first woman, by listening to the advice of the serpent, surrendered herself to sin; the second opened the way to righteousness. The fidelity of the author to the masculine agent in Genesis 3: 15 is brought out in the sense that the woman gives the author of light an entrance, and that author is the killer of the serpent.¹

THE ANTIOCHENES

4. St. John Chrysostom

Chrysostom is dependent on the tradition for his use of types in his discourses, homilies and treatises.² One of the richest and most developed contrasts he uses is that of the virgin-earth from which Adam was formed and the Virgin from whom the Christ took flesh.³ Unfortunately, the setting for such comparisons is often his polemic against the Jews. What concerns us is his use of Genesis 2: 8, Genesis 3: 5, and I Corinthians 15: 47 (the second Adam-Christ) in his treatise, De Mutatione Nominum II.

Chrysostom starts with the meaning of the word Adam as coming from the Hebrew which translated into Greek means “earthly,” “of the earth.” He uses the term Eden—the place where Adam was formed—as meaning virgin-earth (τὸ γὰρ Εδέμ τῆν παρθένον σημαίνει γῆν). “God, indeed, planted a garden in Eden facing the East” (Genesis 2: 8). He then makes the parallel to the Virgin: “Therefore, He has called that paradise Eden because it signifies virgin-earth. This virgin is a type of the latter Virgin. For just as that earth brought forth produce without anything being sown, so, too, this (Virgin) brought forth Christ for us without the seed of man.”⁴ Chrysostom further explains the significance: “Since, therefore, man was formed

¹ PG 46: 1148AB.
² Homilia in Genesim 25, PG 54: 445D-446AD; Sarah, Rachel, Elizabeth, and Rebecca are used as contrasts to the Virgin. Peccata Fratrum Non Evulganda, PG 51: 359AD, 360AD.
³ De Mutatione Nominum II, PG 51: 129AB, 130CD.
⁴ Ibid., PG 51: 129A.
from the virgin earth, Adam is named after his mother. And so men are accustomed often to name their children after their mother: so God, likewise, formed man from the earth and declared him Adam after his mother (earth). She was called Eden, he Adam."

The text that Chrysostom has used is the Septuagint which reads: Ἐδεμ κατὰ ἄνατολάς; in it he sees a relationship between Ἄδαμ/Ἐδεμ. This is only possible in the Greek; for the Hebrew of Genesis 2: 8 reads: יָאוֹן (be éden) for in Eden and דָּוִי (Adám) for Adam. Both words are etymologically distinct; even the sound in the Hebrew tongue would not create a similarity. The illustration serves to show that the Septuagint was Chrysostom's bible, and that several of his ideas are either from an earlier tradition or from such a premise. The notion, however, of God forming Adam from the earth is correct in its biblical context, and in Genesis 2: 8 the term יָאוֹן (yasaḥ) denotes the activity of a potter as he shapes the vessels of clay with his hands. It is a word used in creation terminology. There is an interesting parallel in Jeremiah 1: 5 (formation in his mother's womb) where the image of God's invisible and omnipotent action is already present. Chrysostom is, therefore, drawing up a good parallel for the virginal conception of Jesus; but his etymological argument is false.

The term θεωσῆ is a rendering of Eden. It is only in our texts (Genesis 2: 8, 2: 10, and 4: 16) where Eden is the Septuagint transcription that only a place-name is meant.

Chrysostom, in the same treatise, returns to the concept again in his reflection on Genesis 3: 5: "You will be like gods." In order to instruct Christians in the attitude of humility, he refers to the text on the second Adam (I Cor. 15: 47): "The first man was of earth, formed from dust, the second is the Lord from heaven." His argument leads the listener to give the heavenly origin and name to Christ become flesh through the Incarnation, just as Adam derived his name from the earth. Chrysostom's text differs from the established critical text of I Corinthians 15: 47 which reads simply ἀνθρωπός ἐξ ἰδεώνος. Chrysostom's text reads ἀνθρωπός ὁ κύριος; it is well attested in the manuscripts. It seems that the insertion of ὁ κύριος

---

1 Ibid., PG: 129B.
2 W. Foerster, κτίσω, in ThWKittel (Eng) III: 1007.
3 J. Jeremias, παράδειγμα, in ThWKittel (Eng) V: 766.
5 AlandGNT, p. 616, critical apparatus.
in place of άνθρωπος began with Marcion, thereby explaining the nature of the "man from heaven."\(^1\)

Chrysostom's use of the text is a good one exegetically. In Paul's preaching of the resurrection the first man, who is of the earthly ground, is contrasted with the second man, who is from heaven. Christ is, for Paul, this heavenly man—the last Adam—the life-giving spirit—the second man.\(^2\)

**THE JERUSALEMITES**

5. Cyril of Jerusalem

In his twelfth lecture, Cyril of Jerusalem introduces the contrast of Mary/Eve: "Through Eve yet virgin came death; through a virgin, or rather from a virgin, must the Life appear; that as the serpent beguiled the one, so to the other Gabriel might bring good tidings."\(^3\) Genesis 3: 6, 13 are implied and contrasted with an allusion to Gabriel's salutation in Luke 1: 35. The Scriptural pattern established by Irenaeus in the contrast is maintained. We have seen how Gregory of Nyssa used the same implicit references to Genesis and Luke. Here the emphasis is not on crushing the serpent's head (It is not mentioned.), but on the good news of Gabriel contrasted with the beguiling and bad news of the serpent. We must also see a close parallel to Justin's thought since both the virgin/Eve is mentioned and the Virgin/ (Mary) who brings Life. Justin's words are similar:

Eve, when she was a virgin and undefiled, having conceived the word of the serpent, brought forth disobedience and death: but the Virgin Mary received faith and joy, when the Angel Gabriel announced the good tidings to her.\(^4\)

---

1 B. Metzger, *op. cit.*, p. 568: "The insertion of δ νόμιος (Marcion preferred νόμιος as a substitute for άνθρωπος) is an obvious gloss added to explain the nature of 'the man from heaven'... if this were original there is no reason why it should have been omitted. The singular reading of P\(^4\) (άνθρωπος πνευματικός) shows the influence of ver. 46, while the omission of άνθρωπος (cop* Cyril) is merely a transcriptional accident."


3 *Catechesis XII, De Christo Incarnation*, PG 33: 741B.

4 *Justin, Trypho*, 100.
The next reference to the person of Eve/Mary is set in a polemical context. Cyril is using the birth of Eve from Adam's side as a parallel to the birth of Christ from the Virgin. His own words are quite clear:

Of whom in the beginning was Eve begotten? What mother conceived her the motherless? But the Scripture says that she was born out of Adam's side. Is Eve then born out of a man's side without a mother, and is a child not to be born without a father, of a virgin's womb? This debt of gratitude was due to men from womanhood: for Eve was begotten of Adam, and not conceived of a mother, but as it were brought forth of man alone. Mary, therefore, paid the debt of gratitude, when not by man but of herself alone in an immaculate way she conceived of the Holy Spirit by the power of God.1

The fact of the unique virgin nature of both women places this reflection of Cyril more in line with Justin. The context, incidentally, is polemical in both.

6. Hesychius of Jerusalem

Fr. M. Aubineau has indicated the bibliography for the theme of the New Eve,2 particularly as it applies to the work of Hesychius. Our task is to present simply the reference to the theme as it appears only in the homilies chosen for this study.3

Hesychius shows how the first virgin (Eve) brought sorrow and the pains of childbirth; the second virgin (Mary) dissipates the clouds of sorrow and brings the light of joy.4 Aubineau has seen in the text of Hesychius an allusion to Genesis 3: 16-17 identifying the malediction that has come upon all through Eve; Mary through the intervention of the Angel has brought back joy and enveloped her sisters (all women) with the light. The use of Genesis and Luke has, once again, been the biblical source for this Eve/Mary contrast. The thoughts of both Justin (who emphasizes the parallel of the two virgins) and Irenaeus (who sets up the contrasts) are present in Hesychius.

1 Catechesis XII, 29, PG 33: 761BC.
3 Ibid., see Hom. I: 2: 11-16, p. 26 and Hom. V: 4: 6, p. 164, for the significant parallels of Eve/Mary.
CONCLUSIONS

The Fathers studied in this thesis delivered their homilies and interpretations during the period of 350 A.D. to 430 A.D. Before them, there already was a solid and mature approach to the interpretation of the Word of God. These earlier interpreters, such as Justin and Origen, were a part of the living tradition often referred to in the works of the Cappadocians, the Jerusalemites, and the Antiochenes who were presented here. These latter writers and preachers contributed to the historical enrichment of previously developed biblical exegesis. This is apparent through the sampling of similar texts which were used constantly in reflections upon the Incarnation. The texts chosen were limited to the mystery of the Nativity, the Presentation in the Temple, and to the fact that Mary, the Mother of Jesus, was mentioned within these texts. These texts also illustrate that the development of biblical exegesis from one epoch to another can be traced through a study of limited genres (for example, the homily) and perceived as the presence of the Holy Spirit within the living tradition of interpreting revelation. A primary conclusion, then, is that there is a continuity and a development of interpretation with the tradition of the Christian Churches and areas represented by the eight Fathers who were studied. All of them were faithful to that tradition, and, at the same time, added new insights to their study of the same biblical texts and themes.

The second chapter demonstrates and concludes that the following biblical principles were used by the Fathers:

1. The text of the Bible is the starting point for their exegesis. For the Old Testament they used the Septuagint. The literal sense of the Bible was understood by them as the principal sense.
2. Within the living tradition of Christianity, faith is necessary to understand the Bible and to interpret it faithfully. For the Fathers the text was always related to the living faith they possessed.
3. God is understood by them as Author of the Old Testament and the New Testament. Both Testaments are divinely inspired. The Spirit keeps alive the meaning of the texts within the community of belief.
4. The Incarnation is understood as a mystery of salvation. Christ is always central in their reflections on this mystery. Texts chosen from both the Old and New Testaments are used to bring out the salvific effect of Christ within human history. The purpose of the Incarnation is soteriological.
5. Scripture is best explained by Scripture. The Fathers make abundant use of parallel passages to illustrate the meaning of texts they use.

6. There is an over-arching Divine Plan within God's written revelation. His condescending love has made this Plan known through the Scriptures. He is a Divine Pedagogue.

7. The New Testament is often seen as the fulfillment of the Old Testament—especially of the prophetic sections. This principle is seen also through the continued use of typology which was found in the Apologists. Basically, the relationship of the Old Testament and the New Testament is one of prophecy and its fulfillment.

8. The Fathers continually use certain clusters of texts (orchestrations) in order to develop their interpretation of the mystery of the Incarnation.

9. For this period of time (350-430 A.D.), the Fathers emphasize the distinction of the human and divine natures of Christ in their exegesis.

10. The role of the Virgin Mary in the Incarnation is seen principally in their use of Isaiah 7: 14 which they see fulfilled in her giving birth to Emmanuel-Christ. The New Testament texts confirm this prophecy. Mary is also seen as the perfection of former types and parallels.

In order to enter more concretely into the exegetical methods of the Fathers and to show how they were using the text of the Septuagint, occasionally making slight changes, an orchestration of biblical texts is presented. The comparative study of the sword piercing the soul of Mary (Luke 2: 35) is presented as an example to show the continuing tradition, and, at the same time, the individual insights of the Fathers who commented upon the text. The text also gives evidence of a growth in understanding the role of Mary within the tradition. The later writers removed most of the negative connotations concerning Mary's doubt.

Finally, a contextual study of the texts is presented. Developments are easily noticed and pointed out. Several definite conclusions emerge from this fuller view of the material. First, every Father affirms the physical virginity of Mary. They are fond of the expression "ek parthenou" in order to express this virginity. Often they refer to the notion of the enduring state of her virginity (diamenei). Secondly, the human virginal flesh of Mary is the real medium or instrument for the reality of Jesus' human nature. All of the Fathers studied are convinced that Jesus takes the fullness of His human flesh solely from Mary, the Virgin. Thirdly, the mystery of salvation is emphasized by each of the Fathers in his reflections on the Incarnation. It is a salvific mystery, not merely a revelational one. This mystery is presented
as the Plan of God. It is a fulfillment of what was promised in the Prophets and carried out in the Event of the Birth of Christ. Therefore, the mystery of salvation is seen in the over-arching theme of salvation history—a history which unites both the Old Testament texts and those of the New Testament. In the fourth place, these later Fathers continue to make use of the typology developed by Justin and Irenaeus. This going back and forth from the New Testament to the Old Testament for the discovery of types and their fulfillment in Christ and Mary was part of the living tradition continued by these interpreters of the fourth and fifth centuries. A fifth conclusion is that certain texts were basic to the interpretation of the mystery of the Incarnation in a homiletical context. The two texts which parallel the statement of this thesis are Baruch 3: 38: “He appeared on earth and moved among men” and Isaiah 7: 14: “Behold a Virgin shall conceive and bring forth a son and they shall call him Emmanuel.” The former text illustrates the Incarnation as a mystery embedded within the reality of human history; the latter shows the manner of Christ’s becoming flesh from the Virgin and being “God with us.” These two texts summarize better than any other texts the purpose of this thesis: to show the biblical understanding of the Fathers in their reflections on the mystery of the Incarnation and Mary’s role within it. It is no accident that these texts were the ones most consistently used by the Fathers in their homilies.

Lastly, as a contextual conclusion, we might say that the homiletic interpretation began in the Synagogue and continued in the Christian pulpit. The following article of Vatican II’s “Constitution on the Liturgy” is important for understanding how the Word of God continues and is kept alive:

Sacred Scripture is of the greatest importance in the celebration of the liturgy. For it is from it that lessons are read and explained in the homily, and psalms are sung. . . . it is essential to promote that sweet and living love for sacred scripture to which the venerable tradition of Eastern and Western rites gives testimony. (Art. 24, Vatican II, “The Constitution on the Sacred Liturgy,” Sacrosanctum Concilium, 4 December, 1963).

This study began with the reading of the Torah within the Synagogue as it was presented in Nehemiah 8: 8: “Ezra read plainly from the book of the law of God, interpreting it so that all could understand what was read,” and ended with the plain proclamation and interpretation of the Word of God by the Christian preachers in the Eastern Churches in the late fourth and early fifth centuries. Such preaching was done with a warm and living love and with great attention to the written word of God and the context of the liturgical assembly of God’s people.
Both the Synagogue and the Christian assembly handed on to us a living tradition which has its source in the written revelation of God's words. All of the preachers and interpreters of that Word depended humbly on that Word and on those generations who had preceded them in the proclamation and the interpretation of divine revelation.

The genre selected for this study was intentionally the homily, or, where that was not possible, a catechesis on the Word of God or a true simple interpretation of it. The evidence of an orderly and faithful presentation of that divine message was overwhelming. Certain principles of interpretation formed into a definite pattern, and cherished texts were seen again and again in the geographical areas represented: Jerusalem, Antioch, and Cappadocia.

This is a living testimony to their fidelity to a tradition of Christian faith in which all shared and in their turn faithfully passed on “by word of mouth” to their listeners and to us.

The liturgical setting and occasion of these homilies and scriptural developments was the atmosphere in which the tradition was enlivened and deepened, as insight grew upon insight, and as inspired preachers moved their listeners to understand and to respond, not to their words but to the Word of God.
## BIBLICAL INDEX

### OLD TESTAMENT

**Genesis**
- 13:16: 361
- 15:17: 351
- 20:7: 308
- 21:8: 312

**Deuteronomy**
- 1:7: 370
- 11:24: 370
- 18:15: 363, 364, 365
- 18:18: 364
- 22:27: 286

**Joshua**
- 1:4: 370

**I Samuel**
- 16:1: 288
- 16:18: 288

**I Kings**
- 1:4: 286, 344

**I Chronicles**
- 15:20: 294

**Exodus**
- 2:7: 270, 287
- 14:7: 309
- 22:9: 291
- (23):7: 334
- (32)(31):5: 314, 319
- (47): 283
- (49): 283
- (67):5: 366
- (68):25: 286, 294
- (71):6: 355
- (71):7: 363
- (71):7-8: 370
- (71):8: 363

**Leviticus**
- 12:3: 258
- 12:6: 258
Biblical Index

72:6 278 8:16-18 270, 291
72:8 370 9:1 261
(73):13 375 9:5 260, 262, 266, 268, 269,
(86):5 363, 369, 370 270, 273, 274, 290, 291,
87:5 363, 370 334, 349, 353, 354
87:5, 6 370 9:6 262, 273, 276, 278, 283,
89:29 290 284
(96):11 366 9:11 353
110 364 11:10 277, 354
110:2 287 27:12 370
110:9 265 40:9 309
(117):22 308 44:22 314, 319
118:22 301, 302, 307, 308, 309 45:14 271, 272
118:24 330 49:6 261, 363
129:7 265 50:7 308
(131) 290 53:2 278, 353, 354
(131):6 288 53:8 287
132:11 290 59:20 309
132:17 290 62:11 309, 346, 361
Proverbs 63:9 273, 349
8:25-27 284 63:9 273, 349
Canticles 1:3 286 1:3 286
Wisdom 2:13 273 1:5 378
Isaiah 23:5 365, 366
1:8, 9 291 23:5-8 353
3:2 326 33:15 366
7 339 1:20 273
7:10 270, 291 2:20 273
7:10-16 278 2:24 273
7:14 256, 267, 268, 270, 271, 2:28 273
273, 275, 276, 278, 279, 3:36 272, 284, 363, 365
280, 282, 283, 284, 285, 3:36-38 271, 273, 274, 276, 278,
286, 292, 293, 294, 327, 285, 355
335, 338, 339, 340, 344, 3:37 273
346, 349, 353, 363, 365, 3:38 256, 272, 273, 274, 276,
383 277, 282, 283, 284, 285,
8:8 293 335, 336, 340, 346, 349,
8:10 293 353, 355, 356, 363, 365,
8:14 265, 302, 308 383
386
# Biblical Index

<p>| | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Ezekiel</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:5-6</td>
<td>349</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>326</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:17</td>
<td>303</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>34:23-31</td>
<td>353</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>44:2-4</td>
<td>367</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>44:3</td>
<td>293, 324, 325, 346, 363</td>
<td>2:1-2, 2:6, 359</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Daniel</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:34ff.</td>
<td>308</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:44</td>
<td>308</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:27</td>
<td>368</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:23</td>
<td>293</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:11 (Theodotion)</td>
<td>293</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Hosea</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:20</td>
<td>345</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Amos</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:14</td>
<td>293</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:8-15</td>
<td>353</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Micah</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>353</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:1-3</td>
<td>269</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:2</td>
<td>277, 287, 288</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:7-12</td>
<td>370</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Zechariah</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:10</td>
<td>308</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:12</td>
<td>266, 274, 349, 363, 365, 366</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:9</td>
<td>309, 367</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:10</td>
<td>370</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Malachi</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:2</td>
<td>349, 351</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>NEW TESTAMENT</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Matthew</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:1</td>
<td>287, 356, 358</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:1-17</td>
<td>280</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Page(s)</td>
<td>Reference(s)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:71</td>
<td>265</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:78</td>
<td>274, 366</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:1</td>
<td>262</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:4</td>
<td>281, 359</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:6-7</td>
<td>260, 261</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:10-11</td>
<td>288, 289</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:11</td>
<td>260, 261, 262, 288, 349</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:14</td>
<td>262</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:21-23</td>
<td>262, 373</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:21-38</td>
<td>264</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:22</td>
<td>306</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:22-24</td>
<td>320</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:22-35</td>
<td>322</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:22-38</td>
<td>295, 296</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:23</td>
<td>258, 320, 323, 334</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:25</td>
<td>297</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:25-38</td>
<td>296</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:26</td>
<td>296, 306</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:26-38</td>
<td>362</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:28</td>
<td>300</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:28-32</td>
<td>297</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:29</td>
<td>296</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:30</td>
<td>297, 363</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:30-31</td>
<td>298</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:32</td>
<td>260, 261, 263, 297, 349, 363</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:33</td>
<td>300, 304, 310, 315, 347</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:33-34</td>
<td>306, 307</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:33-35</td>
<td>304, 307</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:34</td>
<td>265, 296, 300, 302, 303, 304, 305, 307, 308, 311, 317</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:34-35</td>
<td>264, 298, 310, 316</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:36</td>
<td>296</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:38</td>
<td>265, 296, 306, 365</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:48</td>
<td>358</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:38</td>
<td>371</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:34</td>
<td>259</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:31</td>
<td>266, 348</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:58</td>
<td>262</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:10</td>
<td>363</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:21</td>
<td>265, 365</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:1</td>
<td>278, 341, 344</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:13</td>
<td>334, 341, 356</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:14</td>
<td>274, 278, 286, 293, 335, 344</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:19</td>
<td>341</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:25</td>
<td>341</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:14-15</td>
<td>317</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:36</td>
<td>290</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:69</td>
<td>259</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:42</td>
<td>357</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:39</td>
<td>312, 316</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:50</td>
<td>314, 318</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:15</td>
<td>309</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:3</td>
<td>272, 284</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:25-27</td>
<td>313, 318</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:19</td>
<td>323</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:26</td>
<td>317</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acts</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:14</td>
<td>259</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:11</td>
<td>308</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:27</td>
<td>259</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:30</td>
<td>259</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:25</td>
<td>365</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:37</td>
<td>365</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:47</td>
<td>261, 363</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Romans</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:3</td>
<td>290, 342, 344</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:3-4</td>
<td>259</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:4</td>
<td>259</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:23</td>
<td>311, 314, 318</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:12</td>
<td>377</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:14</td>
<td>371</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:5</td>
<td>312, 316</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:9</td>
<td>278</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:9-10</td>
<td>277</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:1-5</td>
<td>298</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:5</td>
<td>277, 278, 283</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:30</td>
<td>302</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:32</td>
<td>309</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:33</td>
<td>306, 308, 309</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:1-26</td>
<td>298, 309</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I Corinthians</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:2</td>
<td>319</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:18</td>
<td>314, 319</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:21</td>
<td>314, 319</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biblical Index</td>
<td>Hebrews</td>
<td>Titus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------------------------</td>
<td>-------------------------------</td>
<td>------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:23-24</td>
<td>299, 304</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:24</td>
<td>338</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:25</td>
<td>314, 319</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:16</td>
<td>297</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:22</td>
<td>371</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:45</td>
<td>371</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:47</td>
<td>377, 378</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:54</td>
<td>351</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II Corinthians</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:7</td>
<td>290</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:10</td>
<td>311, 316, 319</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Galatians</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:4</td>
<td>278, 291, 342, 345, 360</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ephesians</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:20</td>
<td>307</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:5</td>
<td>278, 283</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Philippians</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:5-9</td>
<td>278</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:6</td>
<td>374</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:7</td>
<td>278</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II Timothy</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:8</td>
<td>290, 344</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:11</td>
<td>312, 316</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INDEX OF NAMES

*This index does not include the names of biblical authors or other biblical persons (See BIBLICAL INDEX.) and does not refer to the pages of the Bibliography (Names presented there are in alphabetical order and readily consulted.)

Akiba 275
AlandGNT 264, 265, 268, 300, 378
Aldama, J. A. de 320, 321, 322
Ambrose 302, 313, 356
Aphroates 308
Aquila 339
Athanasius 272, 273, 274, 284, 290
Augustine 337, 356
Barnabus [Epistle of] 308, 364, 368
Basil the Great 255, 275-276, 300, 301, 303, 310-319, 329, 330, 335-336, 350-351, 375-376
Berhm, J. 368
Berechiah, R. 354
Bertram, G. 269, 301, 353
Bietenhard, H. 269
Brown, R. E. 258, 259, 260, 262, 263, 265, 302, 303, 313
Büchsel, F. 265
Cabrol, F. 332
Caro, R. 305, 309, 321, 328, 367, 369
Chromatius Aquilensis 290
Chrysostom See John Chrysostom
Clement of Alexandria 254, 271, 274
Clement of Rome 254
Colpe, C. 275, 353, 368
Congar, Y. M. J. 372
Crouzel, H. 310-319, 322, 347
Cullmann, O. 309
Delling, G. 270, 294
Devreesse, R. 274, 360
Epiphanius 302
Ermoni, V. 274
Eusebius 289, 290, 361
Foerster, W. 275, 378
Fohrer, G. 370
Friedrich, G. 364
Gallus, T. 265
Gambero, L. 275, 315
Garrite 307
Geden, A. S. 261
Gelin, A. 378
Gibbs 356
Grant, R. M. 334, 343
Gregory of Nazianzus 255, 276-277, 284, 290, 301, 330, 336-337, 351-352
Groot, A. de 264, 301, 311
Grosdidier de Matons, J. 332
Grundmann, W. 261, 270
Index of Names

Gunther, O. 342, 360
Hengel, M. 262
Hennecke, E. 336, 337
Herrntrich, V. 270, 291
Hesse, F. 269
Hesychius of Jerusalem 255, 256, 265, 284, 292-309, 320-324, 326-328, 332, 346-348, 362-370, 380
Hippolytus 271, 274, 283, 284, 308
Holl, K. 329
Ignatius of Antioch 254, 276, 294, 300, 347, 358, 368, 371
Jeremias, J. 263, 273, 308, 354, 364, 378
Jerome 311
Join-Lambert, M. 371
Josephus 364
Jouassard, G. 371, 374, 376
Kittel, G. 275
Koetschau 269
Kraeling, C. H. 355
LaGrange, M.-J. 289, 294
Lampe 301, 305, 326, 329, 358
Laurentin, R. 374, 376
Léon-Dufour, X. 371
Liddell-Scott 370
Llopard, E. M. 375
Lohe, E. 309, 354, 356, 357, 370
Luck, O. 267
McHugh, J. 261, 265, 282, 303, 350
Marcion 379
Maurer, C. 354, 366
Mays, J. L. 287, 288
Melito (of Sardis) 274, 275, 366
Merx, A. 365
Metzger, B. M. 258, 262, 341, 356, 358, 379
Meyer, R. 275
Michaelis, W. 302, 353, 370
Michel, O. 367
Mingana, A. 291, 331, 342, 360, 361
Moore, C. A. 272
Moulton, W. F. 261
Nicolas, M.-J. 372
Noetus 271
Oepeke, A. 264, 364, 368
Optimus 310, 311, 312
Origen 254, 255, 256, 274, 276, 283, 288, 300, 301, 302, 310-319, 321, 322, 323, 347, 358, 370, 381
Perrin, N. 253
Philippe, E. 274
Philo of Alexandria 254
Picot 366
Pirke Aboth 281
Polycarp 254
Procksch, O. 259
Proclus of Constantinople 321, 367
Prudentius 308
Pseudo-Athanasius 356
Quell, G. 293, 353
Rahlfs 269, 275, 276, 292, 353
Rauer (GCS) 313, 317, 347
Hengstorf, K. H. 365, 370
Romanos the Mélode 332
Sabourin, L. 355, 370
Sasse, H. 269
Schleier, H. 274, 354, 365
Schmidt, K. L. 294
Schneider, C. 368
Schneider, J. 300, 367
Schneewind, J. 269, 353, 364
Schweizer, E. 270, 294
Simon 275
Simonetti, M. 271, 272, 277
Söll, G. 371
Solomon ["Testimony of . . ."] 308
Stählin, G. 371
Stauffer, E. 293, 367
Strach-Billerbeck, 275, 354, 364
Strecker 356
Strycker, E. de 336
Symmachus 308, 339
Tanchuma 275

391
Index of Names

Telfer, W. 332
Tertullian 262, 271, 283, 308, 356, 368, 374
Theodore of Mopsuestia 255, 291, 331, 342, 360-361
Theodoretus 290
Theodotion 293, 339
Theodotus 271
Thomas Aquinas 301

Tj. Baarda 258
Tonneau, R. 360
Trypho 368
Traub, H. 379
Vaccari, A. 270
Van der Woude, A. S. 275, 370
Von Rad, G. 270
Vona, C. 358
Zimmerli, W. 269, 353
TABLE OF CONTENTS
(Material published here)

Complete Table of Contents from Thesis 225

Abbreviations 228

Bibliography 233

Introduction 252

Chapter III: Orchestration of Biblical Texts Used by the Fathers in Their Nativity Homilies: The Role of Mary within the Texts 257

Part I: General Study 257
1. Amphilochius 257
2. Basil the Great 275
3. Gregory of Nyssa 276
4. Gregory of Nazianzus 276
5. John Chrysostom 277
6. Cyril of Jerusalem 285
7. Hesychius of Jerusalem 292

Part II: Hesychius: Study of Texts within Hypapante II 295

Part III: Origen and Basil: A Comparative/Contrast Study of Scriptural Texts 310

Part IV: Amphilochius and Hesychius: Commentary on Ezekiel 44:2 320

Part V: Amphilochius, Gregory of Nyssa and Hesychius: Commentary on Exodus 3:2: The Burning Bush 326

Part VI: Excursus on Liturgical Setting of the Homilies 329

Chapter IV: The Use of the Scriptures and Marian Implications in the Homilies and Writings of the Fathers 333

Part I: On the Virginity of Mary 333
1. The Cappadocians 333
2. The Antiochenes 339
3. The Jerusalemites 343

393
**Table of Contents**

**Part II: Mary's Role in the Soteriological Purpose of the Incarnation**
- The Cappadocians 348
- The Antiochenes 352
- The Jerusalemites 361

**Part III: Typology: Parallelism of: Adam/Christ—Eve/Mary**
- The Cappadocians 372
- The Antiochenes 377
- The Jerusalemites 379

**Conclusions** 381

**Biblical Index** 385

**Index of Names** 390